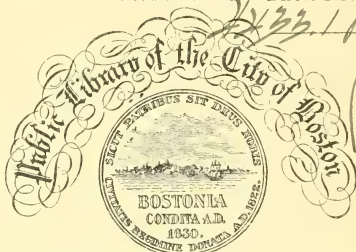
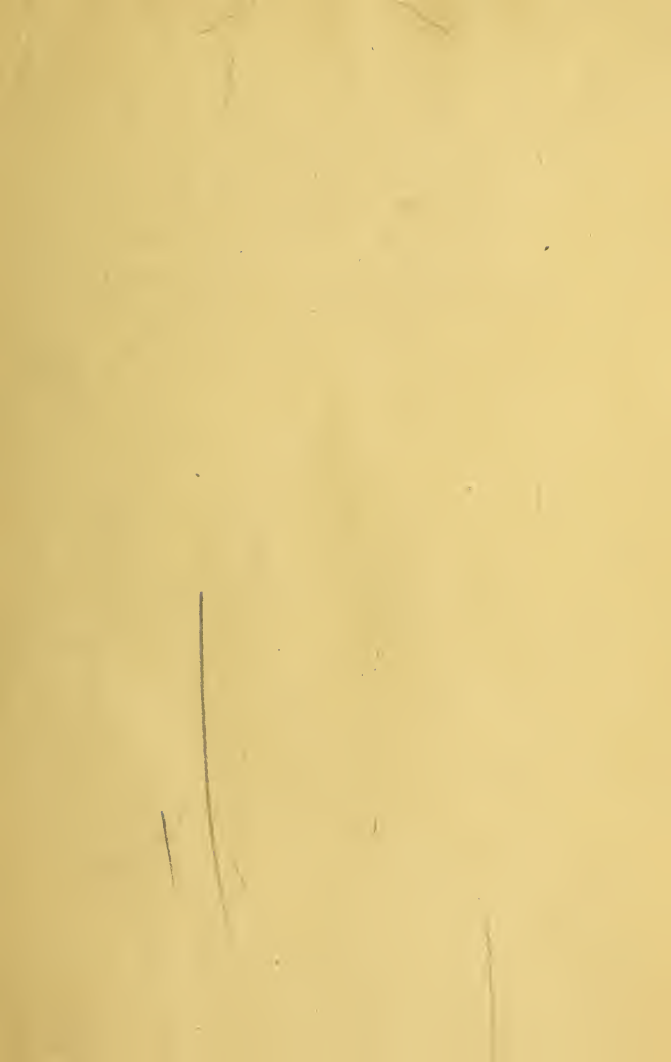


PROPERTY OF THE Shell No.



From the Bates Fund.



*The
Follett-Dezwey
Fassett-Safford
Ancestry*

of

Captain Martin Dezwey Follett
(1765-1831)

and his wife Persis Fassett
(1767-1849)



BEING A COMPILATION OF FAMILY RECORDS AND EXTRACTS FROM VARIOUS HISTORIES, OFFICIAL RECORDS AND GENEALOGICAL PUBLICATIONS RELATING TO THE FOLLETTES OF SALEM, WINDHAM, WYOMING VALLEY AND VERMONT; THE DEWEYS, FASSETTS AND SAFFORDS OF MASSACHUSETTS, CONNECTICUT AND VERMONT; BRIEF GENEALOGICAL NOTICE OF THE HOPKINS, ROBINSON, FAY AND OTHER FAMILIES OF VERMONT: TOGETHER WITH ACCOUNTS OF THE SETTLEMENTS OF WYOMING VALLEY AND VERMONT, THE WYOMING VALLEY MASSACRES, BENNINGTON AND OTHER BATTLES; AND THE DIARY OF CAPTAIN JOHN FASSETT, JR. IN THE EXPEDITION OF THE GREEN MOUNTAIN BOYS IN 1775. + +

By

HARRY PARKER WARD

Secretary of the Ohio Society, Sons of the American Revolution, and of the Ohio Society of the War of 1812; Corresponding Member of the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society; Member of the Vermont Historical Society, Ohio Archaeological and Historical Society, etc.



ANNO DOMINI MDCCCXCVI

7634

Jan 14, 1894.
b.

Press of
Champlin Printing Company,
H. C. & N. P. WARD, PROPRIETORS
COLUMBUS, OHIO.

YRABBU OLUBA
3HT 70
NOT20870YTD

Dedicated to my great-aunt,
Mrs. Hannah Follett Clark,
now in her ninety-third year.

*"For what is your life? It is even a vapour,
that appeareth for a little time, and then
vanisheth away."* James IV:14.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016



THE "MINUTE MAN" OF '70.

BY FRANÇOIS CHOPPIN, PARIS.

BY PERMISSION OF THE OHIO SOCIETY SONS OF THE REVOLUTION.



FOLLETT-DEWEY
FASSETT-SAFFORD
HOPKINS-ROBINSON-FAY
GENEALOGY AND HISTORY

CONTENTS.

Introductory	11
The Early Folletts.....	15
Lieut. Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715— —).....	24
Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778).....	37
The Wyoming Massacre.....	45
Children of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778)....	59
Capt. Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831).....	62
Children of Capt. Martin Dewey Follett.....	77
Frederick Follett (1761—1804).....	89
Children of Frederick Follett (1761—1804)....	99
Samuel Follett, Last Survivor of Bunker Hill..	111
The Deweys.....	113
The Early Fassetts.....	124
Children of Capt. John Fassett, Sr.....	129
Capt. John Fassett, Jr.....	132
Children of Capt. John Fassett, Jr.....	149
The Early Saffords.....	160
Children of Deacon Joseph Safford.....	166
The Hopkines	174
The Robinsons	179
The Fays.....	184
Early Bennington.....	193
Early Cambridge	207
Diary of Capt. John Fassett, Jr.....	211

ILLUSTRATIONS.

The "Minute Man of '76".....	Frontispiece.
Follett's Frog Pond, Windham.....	17
A Wyoming Home.....	35
Forty Fort in 1778.....	35
Wyoming Monument.....	53
Map of Wyoming Valley, 1778.....	58
Map of Trout River Valley, 1820.....	87
Bennington Meeting House, 1766.....	119
The Follett School-house, 1815.....	137
Catamount Tavern.....	187
Seal, Vermont Historical Society.....	192
Arms of Vermont.....	204
Bennington Battle Monument.....	205
Leaf from Capt. Fassett's Diary.....	213
Map of Early Vermont.....	245
Fifty-six Family Portraits.....	247-278

Family Portraits omitted from copies intended for public libraries.

INTRODUCTORY.

As a state officer of two of the patriotic hereditary societies, it has been my privilege to examine many genealogical and historical records. I have read with deep interest the treasured family traditions and official authorities relating to the sufferings and sacrifices of a few hundred of the several hundred thousand men who risked life, health, and oftentimes the welfare of their families, in the making and early preservation of the nation.

Numerous patriotic societies have sprung up in the last few years, a half dozen of which appear to be on such firm foundations as to give promise of being lasting institutions for good. Their efforts have brought from dark attics all manner of old and forgotten documents and papers of past generations, have caused research into musty volumes on the top shelves of our private and public libraries, and have driven cob-webs away from the memories of many of our "oldest relatives." More than this, they are accomplishing inestimable good in the halls of Congress and in the legislatures of the older states in gathering together, preserving and indexing for ready reference all such individual records as can be found. They are erecting monuments, marking graves, publishing magazines and historical works, collecting relics and celebrating in numerous ways the great events of our early history. This is quite right and proper.

INTRODUCTORY.

It is true there is a ridiculous extremity to which "genealogical hunts" are sometimes carried. For an instance we are reliably informed that Dewey blood is traced back to Alfred the Great, and that the Jewetts came from Henri de Juatt, a knight of the First Crusade. This is probably true, but we may be interested in knowing just how much of the blood of Alfred the Great we have in our veins. Supposing it to be forty generations back to Alfred, and knowing that each ancestor, male and female, had a father and a mother, we find, figuring back twenty of those forty generations, that 2,097,150 persons, excepting cases of intermarriage in the same blood, have been direct ancestors to us, 1,048,576 of whom belong to the twentieth generation back, each of whom, if we are to carry it back twenty generations farther, had the same number of ancestors. The human mind can not comprehend the infinitesimal part of our blood that came from Alfred.

Notwithstanding such extremities there is great truth and, just now, much popularity, in the sentiment contained in the oft quoted expression of Edmund Burke "He only deserves to be remembered by posterity who treasures up and preserves the history of his ancestors." The more we study it the truer it seems.

To the subjects of these brief sketches may be appropriated the words of the most prominent American historian, Bancroft, who says, Volume V, p. 165:

"Nothing could restrain the Americans from peopling the wilderness. To be a free-holder was the ruling passion of the New England man. Marriages were early and fruitful. The sons as they grew up, skilled in the use of the ax and the rifle, would, one after another, move from the old homestead, and with a wife, a yoke of oxen, a cow, and a few husbandry tools, build a small hut in some new plantation, and by tasking every faculty of mind and body, win for themselves plenty and independence. Such were they who began

INTRODUCTORY.

to dwell among the untenanted forests that rose between the Penobscot and the Saint Croix, or in the New Hampshire Grants, on each side of the Green Mountains, or in the exquisitely beautiful valley of Wyoming, where, on the banks of the Susquehanna, the wide and rich meadows, shut in by walls of wooded mountains, attracted emigrants from Connecticut, though their claim of right under the charter of their native colony was in conflict with the territorial jurisdiction of the Proprietaries of Pennsylvania."

To the professional genealogist or historian my efforts might seem mere child's play, but to those who have in their veins the blood of the Folletts, Deweys, Fassetts and Saffords of Vermont, I hope they will be interesting and acceptable.

The work is by no means complete. There are numerous directions in which investigation may be continued, and no doubt with good results, particularly in the early colonial records, to which I have been able to devote but little time. No undertaking of this nature can be carried on without assistance. I find myself under many and lasting obligations to a number of persons who ought to be considered co-workers in the compilation. For family records I am indebted to Hon. Martin Dewey Follett of Marietta, Ohio, Hon. Elias Fassett, and his daughter Mrs. Morris J. Riggs, of Toledo, Ohio, Mr. Benjamin D. Hopkins of St. Albans, Vt., General William Farrar Smith, U. S. Army, of Wilmington, Del., Mr. Joseph E. Follett, of Milwaukee, Wis., Mr. James D. Follett, Sr. of Chicago, Mr. Benjamin Franklin Follett, of Leadville, Colo., Mrs. Frederick Follett Buell, of Troy, N. Y., Mrs. F. W. Ball, of Cleveland, Hon. A. G. Safford, of Washington, D. C., Mr. W. A. Comings, of East Berkshire, Vt., and Mr. Harry Tracey Buttolph of Buffalo, N. Y., by each of whom my lengthy correspondence has been taken up with enthusiasm. Miss Alice Boardman, Assistant Librarian of the Ohio State Library, has ex-

INTRODUCTORY.

tended courtesies and assistance to me almost daily for months past. Rev. Horace Edwin Hayden, of Wilkes-Barre, Pa., Corresponding Secretary of the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society, has very kindly and patiently taken up and investigated one request after another in regard to Wyoming Valley history, and from Hon. Elias Fassett, of Toledo, Ohio, Mrs. M. M. Kirkinan, of Evanston, Ills., Mr. Ethan Allen Weaver, Secretary of the Pennsylvania Society, Sons of the Revolution, Mr. Charles Searle Elder, of Zanesville, Ohio, Mrs. William A. Castle, of Alexandria, Ohio, Mr. Benjamin D. Hopkins, of St. Albans, Vt., and Mr. William Clement Bryant, of Buffalo, N. Y., I have received books that are no longer in print and could not be found in the Ohio State Library. Hon. Melvil Dewey, Librarian of the State of New York, rendered material assistance in looking up authorities on the Deweys, and Mrs. Henry Comings of St. Paul, Minn., and Mr. Charles Dewey, of Montpelier, Vt., furnished private records of the Dewey genealogy. Judge William Safford, of Chillicothe, Ohio, also furnished his private record, although but a small portion of it could be used. For permission to reproduce copyrighted illustrations I am indebted to Dr. F. C. Johnson of the Wilkes-Barre Record, Hon. William M. Egle, M. D., Librarian of the State of Pennsylvania, Mr. M. E. Watson, of Bennington, Vt., and the Willimantic Linen Company, of Hartford, Conn. Several illustrations have been furnished by Mr. B. D. Hopkins of St. Albans and Hon. Hiram Carleton, President of the Vermont Historical Society, Montpelier, who has also supplied much information concerning Capt. John Fassett Jr.

H. P. W.

Columbus, Ohio, January 1, 1896.

THE EARLY FOLLETT.

ROBERT FOLLETT (born probably about 1625, died 1708). American Ancestry, Vol. IV, p. 127, says "of Salem, Mass., married there July 29, 1655, Persis Black, and had John and Abraham of Attleborough, Isaac of Salem and Benjamin of Windham. He may have been related to John of Dover and William of Oyster Creek." The William referred to is mentioned in N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. VII, p. 338 as being on bond on a will Sep. 19, 1654, at Oyster River, and in same volume, p. 356, 5 mo., 1651, in the purchase of a saw-mill. Same authority, Vol. IX, p. 366, mentions Robert of Salem and his son Abraham, born December 23, 1671. Same authority, Vol. XV, p. 60, Sarah, the daughter of Abraham, baptized August ye 13, 1699, and p. 72, Jonathan, son of John, both items from Rehoboth church records.

The following is extracted from the extensive manuscript records of the early Folletts prepared by Hon. Martin Dewey Follett (1826) of Marietta, Ohio, who, some years ago, spent a great deal of time in examining, personally, original records in different towns in New England.

FROM THE RECORDS OF SALEM, MASS.

"Robert Follett maryed to Persis Black" in Salem, Mass., 29, 7 mo., 1655.

Their children, born in Salem:

Mary, March 16, 1656.

Robert, July 20, 1659.

Susannah, June 1, 1662.

Hannah, October 23, 1664.

Ruth, October 17, 1667, died May 1, 1668.

THE EARLY FOLLETT.

John, July 10, 1669.

Abraham, December 23, 1671.

Isaac, July 30, 1674.

Rebecca, July 30, 1674.

Benjamin, — —, 1676 (probably), baptized Sept. 10, 1687.

Robert Follett (1625?—1708) is first mentioned in these records as married to Persis Black. With the same record is given the births of their children. These facts are recorded on page 20, Vol. I, Marriage Records, and on pages 19, 20 and 21, Vol. I, Records of Births. In these records is found no account of the birth of Benjamin (1676?—1752), but in Vol. 7, p. 126 Essex Institute History, record of baptisms of the First Church of Salem, Mass., on Sept. 10, 1687, of "John, Abraham, Isaac, Rebecca, Benjamin, of Robert Follett." Robert Follett and Persis his wife, joined this First Church September 7, 1686, as shown in Vol. XVI, p. 9, of Essex Institute History."

"Also in Deeds Records of Salem, book 16, p. 129 is a record of the deed, dated August 3, 1704, by which Robert Follett alone (his first wife must have been dead then) 'in consideration of natural affection which I have and do bear, and in consideration of several payments, agreements, duties, contracts which they have covenanted with me to perform' etc. conveyed to his 'two sons, Isaac, Benjamin', 'all that my homestead, being a farm of about 130 acres of arable pasture and meadow ground', and all his other real estate whatsoever, 'and all' his 'cattle, horses, sheep, and other creatures whatsoever.'"

"Robert Follett (1625?—1708) by deed of April 9, 1703, book 17, p. 67, had before conveyed to William Harbett (Herbert), his grandson (a son of Mary), for ten pounds and affection, his dwelling house and lot. There is no tax in Robert's name after 1700, only in the name of Isaac Follett and Benjamin Follett until 1709, then Isaac alone. The interest of Benjamin in the 130 acres (less ten acres deeded before) was conveyed by Benjamin and Patience, his



FOLLETT'S FROG POND, WINDHAM, 1758.
See page 22.

COPYRIGHT OWNED BY WILLIMANTIC LINEN CO., HARTFORD, CONN.

*Boston
Public Library*

wife, to others, Nov. 4, 1708, in which deed he calls Robert Follett his father lately deceased, and retains the right of possession of his house and right to use firewood until May 1, 1709. Robert owned land before May 4, 1659. At that time he added to his former land a house and one and one half acres of land as shown by deed in Vol. I, p. 166, Deeds Records. At first the deeds called Robert Follett 'shoreman' the 'shoreman or farmer' then 'husbandman.' "

"Robert Follett (1625?—1708) must have possessed provident habits and parental care and love. After thirty-one years of married life the parents united with the First Church of Salem, Mass., September 7, 1686. Their children Hannah Follett, Mary Herbert, and Susannah Sibley had been baptized January 2, 1686, at their own request. The next year, September 10, 1687, the minor children were baptized, John, when 18, Abraham when nearly 16, Isaac and Rebecca (twins) when 13, and Benjamin when probably 9 or 10 years old, and probably at their parents' request. Robert Follett, Jr. (b. 1659) must have died before that time."

The manuscript records of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett (1826) give about all the descendants of Robert (1625?—1708) for several generations.

Several other records of early Folletts are at hand but the writer can find no connection with Robert (1625?—1708) or his ancestry.

Benjamin Follett (1676?—1752), son of Robert Follett (1625?—1708) was born about 1676 or 1677 at Salem, Mass. American Ancestry Vol. IV, p. 127, says "Of Massachusetts and Connecticut. Son of Robert. Born at Salem, Mass., about 1676, died at Windham, 1752. Moved there 1709. Married March 13, 1707, Patience Doulee." The manuscript records of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett (1826) give the date of marriage as March 13, 1706--7, copied from marriage records of Salem, Mass., Vol. I, p. 19, and the records of their children, taken from the records of Windham, Conn., as follows:

THE EARLY FOLLETT'S.

Elizabeth, December 6, 1707.

Abigail, January 26, 1709.

Mary, March 23, 1711.

Susannah, December 13, 1712.

Benjamin, March 28, 1715.

Hannah, November 15, 1716.

Hezekiah, August 23, 1719.

Joseph, April 21, 1721.

The place of birth of first child Elizabeth, is given as Salem, of second child not given, and of all the rest, Windham. It is quite probable from the date given in the deed of Benjamin (1676?—1752), previously referred to in the notice of his father, that Benjamin left Salem for Windham about May 1, 1709. He is mentioned as "husbandman," Deed-book 26, p. 40. He died 1752 and his wife Patience in 1757 at Windham, Conn., where their graves have been seen by Hon. Martin Dewey Follett (1826).

In this connection a few random extracts concerning the children of Benjamin (1676?—1752) may be of interest before we come to the child in whom we are more particularly interested, Benjamin, Jr. (1715— —). Hezekiah (1719-1782) married Hannah Read 1743-4 and their children were Jerusha (1744), John (1746), Abner (1747), Susannah (1749), Elizabeth (1751), Hannah (1752), Irene (1755), Levinia (1757—1841), Anna (1758—1833). Hezekiah's wife Hannah died 1762 and he married again 1763, and had born to him Hezekiah, (1764 died early), Oliver (1766—1816), Hezekiah (1768, he and his children dead). Hezekiah (1719—1782) joined the church 1742 and was remarkable for his great strength. Marvin Follett, son of Abner, son of Abner (1747), of Windham, said the male Folletts of Windham had nearly all died or gone.

Joseph (1721— —), son of Benjamin (1676?—1752) married Hannah ——— in 1742 and their children were Mary (1744—1745), Mary (1745) Joseph (1747—1747), Hannah (1748—1748), Isaac (1750), Joseph (1751), Timothy (1754), and Isaac (1756). This Isaac went to Vermont. Joseph (1721— —) joined

the church in Windham and the record shows him as "removed," but does not say to what place. Possibly he removed to Wyoming as may appear later. Mr. Joseph E. Follett of Milwaukee says of this Joseph (1721 — —) "I think he is the progenitor of the Vermont branch of the Folletts, of which Timothy, late of Burlington, was one."

Mr. J. W. Follett, of Worcester, Mass., wrote in 1882, to Mr. Joseph E. Follett, of Milwaukee, that he was the son of Abner, who was the son of Abner, Sr., who was the son of Benjamin (an error, should be Hezekiah) who was the son of Benjamin, Sr., and that there was a tradition in his family that three brothers who came from England landed at Salem at an early date, 16—, one of whom went to Connecticut, and one to Vermont, the other remaining at Salem. That part of the tradition referring to the settlement of one brother in Vermont would seem to be without foundation as Bennington was the first town really settled in Vermont, 1761, although Thompson's History of Vermont mentions the first civilized establishment in the limits of Vermont as Fort Dummer, 1724. It is possible that William of Oyster Creek, John of Dover, and Robert (1625?—1708) of Salem were the three emigrant brothers referred to. Mr. J. W. Follett adds "Have heard my father speak of the widow of the brother killed at the massacre as 'Aunt Hannah', who, with her children, rode on horseback from Pennsylvania to Connecticut." This would be evidently wrong both as to the name of the widow and in regard to returning to Connecticut, unless there were other Folletts than the families of Benjamin Jr., (1715— —) Eliphalet (1741—1778) at Wyoming at the time of the 1778 massacre. We see from our records that Benjamin Jr. (1715— —), had a sister Hannah and a brother Joseph, whose wife's name was Hannah, and the date and place of whose death is not given. We find also that Joseph Follett of Windham joined the Susquehanna Company May 1, 1754, and paid money into the treasury of the com-

THE EARLY FOLLETT.

pany Dec. 19, 1754 (Penna. Archives, Vol. XVIII, pp. 20 and 29). As to whether he actually went out to the Susquehanna we have as yet found no record. The Windham church records having the word "removed" after Joseph's name, it is possible the "Aunt Hannah" referred to was his wife, and that they suffered in one of the Wyoming massacres.

It is possible, too, that Mr. J. W. Follett's father may have referred to the first massacre of settlers in 1763, at which time we shall see Benjamin, Jr. (1715 — —), was, with scarcely any doubt, in the Wyoming Valley, and retreated with the other settlers to Connecticut. Our family records give no light on the first massacre.

There seem to be no records of the names of those who suffered in the 1763 massacre, and it is probable that the list of 1778 sufferers is by no means complete.

Mr. J. W. Follett continues in his letter that he lived for many years on the old Follett place, a mile from Windham, which had been in the Follett family for six generations, and where, in 1758, the famous "Frog Fight" took place in "Follett's Pond" which caused a great scare in the village. He refers to "an article in Scribner's Monthly Magazine, 1880 (error—should be Sept., 1878), entitled 'The History of a Spool of Thread,' referring to an important industry in Willimantic—the Frog Pond among its illustrations," and to Trumbull's History of Connecticut in regard to the Frog Fight.

"This terrible night, the parson did fright
His people almost in despair;
For poor Windham souls, among the bean poles,
He made a most wonderful prayer,

* * *

Those lusty frogs, they fought like dogs,
For which I do commend them;
But lost the day, for want, I say,
Of weapons to defend them."

—*Connecticut Historical Collections*, p. 448.

GENEALOGICAL LETTERS.

Mr. Joseph E. Follett also received a letter in 1882 from Mr. Benjamin Follett, of Olivet, Mich., (then seventy-nine years of age) in which the Abner, Sr., previously mentioned as the grandfather of Mr. J. W. Follett is mentioned as the son of Hezekiah, who was the son of Benjamin, Sr. This would show Mr. J. W. Follett's statement in regard to descent from Benjamin, Sr. (1676?—1752), to be correct, but wrong in regard to descent from Benjamin, Jr. (1715 — —), who was his great uncle. Mr. Benjamin Follett's letter states that the first Follett who came to America landed at New York and married a French lady, of whom he has no further direct record. He mentions William, of Oyster Creek, Mass., in 1654; Benjamin, whose name he finds in the Windham church manual early in 1700, and who died 1752; Joseph, in 1740, no other record, only "removed"; next Benjamin, who united with the church 1753, and Hezekiah, who joined in 1742 and died 1782. Mr. Benjamin Follett was son of Oliver, who was son of Hezekiah, who was son of Benjamin, Sr. (1676?—1752). He says that Frederick Follett (1761—1804) was cousin to his father (Oliver) and used to visit him. He also mentions the retreat of the widow of Eliphalet (1741—1778) from Wyoming to Vermont (not Connecticut). He refers to Hezekiah as the son of Benjamin, Sr., and the father of Abner, Oliver, Hezekiah and six or more daughters. Mr. J. W. Follett also refers to Abner as having brothers, Hezekiah and Oliver, and sisters, Susanna, Levinia, Anna and two or three others whose names he has forgotten. It is therefore evident that the letters of Mr. J. W. Follett, of Worcester, Mass., and Mr. Benjamin Follett, of Olivet, Mich., refer to the same family. Mr. Joseph E. Follett has letters from New Hampshire Folletts with whom he thinks we have no connection.

LIEUTENANT BENJAMIN FOLLETT, JR.
(1715— —)

BENJAMIN FOLLETT, JR. (1715— —), son of Benjamin Follett (1676?—1752), was born March 28, 1715, at Windham, Conn. Of the date and place of his death we have no positive record, although the records of Luzerne County, Pennsylvania, show that Frederick Follett was administrator of the estate of Benjamin Follett, with Lawrence Myers and Lew Butler as sureties; date of bond April 2, 1788, amount £500. From this it may be supposed that our ancestor, Benjamin Follett (1715— —) was the one referred to and that he died some time previous to April 2, 1788.

American Ancestry, Vol. IV, p. 127, says: "Of Windham, Conn., son of Benjamin. Born there March 28, 1715. Moved to Wyoming, Pa. Married Nov. 10, 1736, Hannah Woodward."

The manuscript records of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett (1826) confirm the above and give the children as follows:

Nathan, born August 27, 1739, died July 18, 1744.

Eliphalet, born January 16, 1740—1, died July 3, 1778 (killed).

Benjamin, born November 10, 1742.

Eunice, born January 4, 1744, died April 13, 1747.

Nathan, born February 11, 1748, died January 9, 1764.

Amos, born January 24, 1750, died October 23, 1751.

Amos, born May 23, 1753, died February 20, 1754.

CHILDREN.

Levi, born August 10, 1756, died June 12, 1757.

Hannah, wife and mother, died May 2, 1757.

Lieutenant Benjamin Follett (1715— —) (the title "Lieutenant" found by Hon. Martin Dewey Follett [1826] on church records), married for second wife Esther Robinson, February 2, 1758. Their children were:

Mary, born December 4, 1758.

Lydia, born December 14, 1759.

Frederick, born March 10, 1761, died May, 1804.

Roger, born August 9, 1763.

Nathan, born January 23, 1765.

Benjamin (1742), son of Benjamin, Jr. (1715— —), married Thankful Bibbin in Windham March 8, 1769. (See notice of Frederick later.)

"Marvin Follett, of Windham, Conn., in 1883 (then 81 years of age) said that uncle Benjamin Follett" (1715— —) "married and went to Wyoming Valley and with him a colony from Pomfret, Vt., and from Connecticut. He went with an ox team which was a splendid yoke of oxen, red, with high heads, large horns and brass knobs on their horns. He got land of the government, etc., and when the Tories and others had killed some and carried off others, Benjamin and his wife Esther, and Frederick, who was scalped, and others, came back to Windham, and lived there a while; then, with the aid of the government, they got their land back again, and returned to Wyoming." He united with the Windham church 1753. The statements of Marvin Follett are not specific, but show beyond any doubt whatever that it is our ancestor who is referred to in the various histories, from which extracts will be given.

Mrs. Frederick Follett Buell, of Troy, N. Y., is of the opinion that Lieutenant Benjamin Follett (1715— —) was taken prisoner in the French war, when he earned his title as lieutenant. She writes under date of December 1, 1895: "This same Frederick," referring to Frederick Follett (1761—1804) son of Lieutenant Benjamin Follett (1715—

—), “had a son Benjamin, who was a midshipman on the ‘Chesapeake’ and was carried to Quebec a prisoner, and there confined in the same cell his father was in. This last is Uncle Ben’s account, and I wish it could be looked up, because I think it is a mistake, and was Lieutenant Benjamin, who might have been made a prisoner during the French and Indian wars.”

Mrs. Buell’s records show that Benjamin (1715 — —) was commissioned second lieutenant in the army in October, 1756, at Windham. We have record that one of the “three principal men” of the Forty Settlers, Isaac Tripp, had been an officer in the French war. It is quite probable that the three, of whom Benjamin Follett was one, as will appear later, had all been selected as principal men on account of some such service in war.

In an effort to positively locate Benjamin during the French war, the following, obtained from the State of Connecticut, is the only official record the writer has been able to find at this time:

STATE OF CONNECTICUT,
ADJUTANT GENERAL’S OFFICE,
HARTFORD, *December 11, 1895.*

“This is to certify that Benjamin Follett served in the colonial wars, and the following is said service, according to the records of this office:

“At a General Assembly of the Governor and Company of His English Majesty’s Colony of Connecticut, in New England in America, holden at New Haven, in said Colony the 14th day of May, Annoqui Domini 1756, troops were raised to repel the attack of the enemy upon Lake George. It was resolved by said assembly: In the fifth regiment, shall be raised forty-seven men, and in the eleventh regiment shall be raised fifty men, making ninety-seven in the whole, which shall be the tenth company in the first regiment, sent from this Colony in said camp, and that Benjamin Lee of Plainfield, be Captain, Israel Williams of Pomfret, First Lieutenant, and Benjamin

SERVICE IN FRENCH WAR.

Follett of Windham, Second Lieutenant of said Company."

In testimony whereof, we have affixed hereto the seal of this office.

(Signed.)

WM. E. F. LANDUS,

[Seal.]

Col. and Ass't Adj't General."

War was declared May 18, 1756.

Trumbull's History of Connecticut, Volume II, Chapter 16, gives a brief account of the campaign of 1756. The following are extracts:

"Great expectations were now formed, of a vigorous and successful campaign. The northern colonies exhibited a noble zeal in his majesty's service, and had their respective quotas of troops early in the field. Connecticut, in particular, raised two thousand five hundred men, which was double the number required by the commander-in-chief, as the proportion of the colony in the service of that year." This seems to have been in May.

"By this time (about August 1st), General Winslow, with about seven thousand of the New England and New York troops, had advanced to the south landing of Lake George. They were in high spirits, perfectly harmonious, and waited with impatience to be led to the attack of Crown Point." The inactivity of the British generals lost them the fort at Oswego and nothing was done during the fall. "The provincials returned to their respective colonies. * * * Thus ended the northern campaign of 1756." "The last year the provincials, under their own generals and officers, had performed immense labour, in clearing and making roads through a wilderness; advanced far on the enemy; erected forts, built ships, many hundreds of boats and batteaux; defeated one army of the enemy, and taken the general captive."

Chapter 17, of Trumbull's History gives the campaigns of 1757. We find "Connecticut again had her whole quota seasonably raised." The tradition in regard to Lieutenant Benjamin Follett (1715— —)

being taken prisoner may, in all probability, be true. It would then be probable that he was one of the garrison at Fort William Henry, which was taken by the French August 9, 1757. The massacre of the Indians who were in the British service, women and children, by the Indian allies of the French, after the British had surrendered and laid down their arms, was perhaps the most blood-curdling event in the history of America, even worse than that of Wyoming valley on account of the tortures inflicted on women and children. Trumbull says: "Men and women had their throats cut, their bodies ripped open, and their bowels, with insult, thrown in their faces. Infants and children were barbarously taken by the heels and their brains dashed out against stones and trees." We have neither proof nor record that Lieutenant Benjamin Follett was in this garrison, but even in case he were not, the foregoing account will serve to show what some of the experiences of colonial warfare were. After the disastrous campaigns of 1756 and 1757, Connecticut again raised an army of five thousand in 1758 for another unsuccessful campaign. Just how much service or how much imprisonment Lieutenant Follett experienced we do not know.

"Canaan of old, as we are told,
When it did rain down manna,
Wa'nt half so good for heavenly food
As Dyer makes Susquehanna."

—Old Verse—Author Unknown.

In Pennsylvania Archives, Second Series, Vol. XVIII, we find the name of Benjamin Follet, sometimes spelled Follett, a number of times. On page 6 we find him, July 18, 1753, one of the apparently original members of the great Susquehanna Company, whose object was set forth as follows: "That whereas, we being desirous to enlarge his Majesties English settlm'ts in North Am'a, and further to spread Xtianity, as also to promote our own temporal Int'st, do hereby each of us," etc. On page 19,

THE SUSQUEHANNA COMPANY.

we find he paid, "Jan'y 9, 1754," "£8, 2, 6 for $\frac{1}{2}$ share." On page 61, he appears as one of a committee of five "to approve, admit, oversee, superintend, manage, and order the affairs and proceedings of the first forty settlers," etc., to great length, this under date 28th December, 1768, at Hartford, when arrangements were being effected to again attempt a settlement at Wyoming, no attempt having been made since the massacre of 1763. On page 68, we find it was voted at a meeting of the Susquehanna Company, held in September, 1769, at Windham, "that £18 L. M. be paid out of the Susq'a money by Sam'l Gray, Esq., to Mr. Isaac Tripp, Benjamin Follett and John Jenkins, as a committee, to be equally divided and paid to the several persons now bound over to the court at Easton" (60 miles distant), and "voted that persons that are bound over to answer at the court at Easton this month, shall receive three dollars to bear their expenses on their way there," and that thanks be "returned to Mr. William Ledley for his kind services to our friends, the first forty, while at Easton under arrest," etc. Benjamin Follett was evidently in this party, as will be seen later. On page 71 we find it voted, in a meeting of the company at Hartford, June 6, 1770, that Benjamin Follett and thirteen others "are hereby appointed a committee to assist Major Durkee in ordering and directing in all the affairs relating to the well government of said settlers," etc., and on page 73, November 27, 1770, "£50 L. M." sent to Philadelphia and Easton "for Major Durkee and the rest of the New England prisoners in gaol, to maintain and support them," etc. On page 77, at a meeting at Windham March 13, 1771, "Whereas, our settlers are again unjustly and inhumanly drove off from their settlements at Wyoming, and robbed of their effects by a gang of lawless and wicked men, and it is judged best and necessary for the interests of this Company to regain and hold possession," etc., Benjamin Follett and twenty others, "be a committee to take the names of

such persons as shall engage to go forward," etc. By reference to pages 91 and 92, the writer is satisfied that Benjamin Follett must have been enrolled in the militia.

Wright, in his *Historical Sketches of Plymouth, Pa.*, p. 77—8, says: "In 1762, the year preceding the treaty of peace between England and France, the Susquehanna Company sent out Mr. Jenkins again, in company with Isaac Tripp, Benjamin Follet, William Buck and a hundred and fifteen other adventurers, to take possession of their lands here, and by force, if necessary. They commenced the erection of log houses at the mouth of Mill Creek, a mile above the site of Wilkes-Barre. They cleared some land and sowed it with grain; but we learn of no effort to reconcile the Indians. In the autumn of this year they returned to Connecticut. In the following spring they came back," etc.

Stone says, p. 130: "The new colonists set themselves vigorously at work; a sufficient number of log houses and cabins were erected for their accomodation, and before the arrival of winter, extensive fields of wheat had been sown upon lands covered with forest trees in August. These adventurers had not taken their families with them, and having now made so favorable a beginning, they secured their agricultural implements and returned to Connecticut."

Hollister, p. 93, says that when the Yankees returned to the valley in the spring of 1763, with their families, they brought along "cattle, sheep, hogs and grain sufficient to last them until the coming harvest. Traffic and fur trading sprung up with the surrounding tribes," etc.

Chapman, p. 70, says: "During the preceding summer (1762) the friendly disposition manifested by the Indians to the Wyoming settlers, as the Connecticut emigrants were called, had created a degree of confidence on their part which had prevented any expectation of danger; and fearing that warlike arms might create suspicion, they had not furnished them-

MASSACRE OF WYOMING SETTLERS, 1763.

selves with any, and were almost destitute of any means of defence in case of an attack from the savages. While thus unsuspecting and occupied, as usual, with the labors of the field, they were attacked on the fifteenth of October by a party of Indians, who massacred about twenty persons, took several prisoners, and having seized upon the live stock, drove it towards their town. Those who escaped hastened to their dwellings, gave the alarm to the families of those who were killed, and the remainder of the colonists, men, women and children fled precipitately to the mountains, from whence they beheld the smoke arising from their habitations and the savages feasting on the remains of their little property. They had taken no provisions with them except what they hastily seized in their flight, and must pass through a wilderness sixty miles in extent before they could reach the Delaware river. They had left brothers, husbands and sons to the mercy of the savages—they had no means of defence in case they should be attacked, and found themselves exposed to the cold winds of autumn without sufficient raiment. With these melancholy recollections and cheerless prospects did the fugitives commence a journey of two hundred and fifty miles on foot."

Hollister, p. 94, mentions an expedition of Pennymites against the Yankees at this time which reached the valley October 17, 1763, two days after the massacre. Hollister quotes the Pennsylvania Archives, 1763, p. 125, as follows: "He met with no Indians, but found the New Englanders who had been killed and scalped a day or two before they got there. They buried the dead, nine men and one woman, who had been most cruelly butchered; the woman was roasted and had two hinges in her hands, supposed to have been put in red hot, and several of the men had awls thrust into their eyes, and spears, arrows, pitchforks, etc., sticking in their bodies."

We find Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715— —), again in 1768 and 1769, as follows: Chapman, p. 73,

says, regarding the actions of the Susquehanna Company at Hartford, after the Indian treaty of November 5, 1768, "In these resolutions they resolve that forty persons, being proprietors, shall proceed to Wyoming to commence settlements by the first of February; that two hundred more shall follow them early in the spring, and that £200 shall be immediately appropriated to provide implements of husbandry and provisions for the forty. The resolutions appointed a committee consisting of Isaac Tripp, Benjamin Follett, John Jenkins, William Buck and Benjamin Shoemaker, being part of the forty, who were to have the government and superintendence of the colony."

Hollister, p. 106, says: "John Jenkins, Isaac Tripp, Benjamin Follett, William Burk and Benjamin Shoemaker were appointed a committee to exercise a general superintendence over the affairs of the forty settlers, and to lay out and prepare a road through the wilderness to Susquehanna river. Fifty pounds, Connecticut currency (\$167), was voted this committee to build this first road opened from the East to Wyoming. This trail or public road followed the warriors' path, and, unbridged for swamps and streams sometimes formidable indeed, was simply widened for the saddle horse." Stone, p. 144, mentions the same committee.

But the Pennymites were occupying their old block-house. As the Pennymite captain, Ogden, had only ten men in his command, he laid a trap for the Yankees, sending a "polite conciliatory note to the commander of the forty" requesting an interview on the subject of their respective titles. Miner says, p. 108: "That they could out-talk the Pennymites, and convince them that the Susquehanna title was good, not one of the forty doubted. Three of the chief men were deputed to argue the matter, viz: Isaac Tripp and Benjamin Follett, two of the executive committee, accompanied by Mr. Vine Elderkin. No sooner were they within the block-house, than Sheriff

ARREST BY PENNYMITES.

Jenkins (the Pennymite) clapped a writ on their shoulders: 'Gentlemen, in the name of the commonwealth of Pennsylvania, you are my prisoners!' 'Laugh when we must, be candid when we can.' The Yankees were decidedly outwitted. By common consent the prisoners were transported to Easton jail, guarded by Captain Ogden; but accompanied in no hostile manner, by the thirty-seven remnants of the forty." Bail was promptly given and the forty returned peaceably to Wyoming. This incident is given, together with names, in numerous other histories, among them Chapman, p. 76; Stone, p. 146, and Hollister, p. 143.

We next find Benjamin Follett's name in a list of thirty-five persons who located near Pittston in May 1769. (See Hollister, p. 111.) On p. 110, Hollister quotes a Pennymite, who writes: "That he had but twenty-four men to oppose the New England men, of whom one hundred and forty-six, chiefly on horseback, passed by our houses this afternoon (May 16, 1769) about three o'clock, and are now encamped on the east side of the river. From the view I had of those gentry, in their procession by our houses, they appear to be, at least an equal number of them, of the very lowest class, but are almost all armed and fit for mischief." Hollister adds: "Such was the language and such the bitterness of the reception meted out to the newcomers from Paxton entering the valley. It was thus amidst king's writs, posses and arrests, as will be seen, and all the severities incident to the backwoodsman's life," etc.

Whether Benjamin, Jr. (1715— —), remained at Pittston we do not know, as Hollister says of the thirty-five Pittston settlers: "Although many of these men subsequently settled in the more central or lower townships, they at this time located on the belt of ground running in such exquisite beauty from Campbell's Ledge down to the outlet of the Lackawanna."

Kulp, page 963, mentions "Benjamin Follett, one of the Executive Committee," as captured and sent to Easton a prisoner, 1773. But the trips to and from the Easton "gaol" were comparatively trivial affairs, compared with the trouble which the Connecticut settlers were submitted to for many years in regard to the final titles for their lands. Volume XVIII, Pennsylvania Archives, Second Series, devotes nearly eight hundred pages to that almost interminable dispute. Had Benjamin Follett (1715— —) not been possessed of a vast amount of grit and determination he would never have kept coming back at both Pennymites and Indians, as he seems to have done after each time he was driven out of the Wyoming Valley. It is much to be regretted that there are at hand no details of his life during the revolution, but we rest assured that a man who would fight for his Connecticut claims as he did, would fight just as hard for his country at the time of the great massacre of 1778, and we have reason to believe that he was in the valley at that time, as we see in the statement of Marvin Follett, previously given, that he left the valley at some time after the massacre and returned again. His name does not appear in the list of survivors of the battle as given on the monument, and it is therefore quite probable that he was not in the battle, but was either at his farm or in one of the other forts.



A WYOMING HOME, 1778.

FROM PECK'S HISTORY



FORTY FORT IN 1778.

BY PERMISSION OF HON. WM. M. EGLE, M. D., LIBRARIAN STATE OF PENN.

ELIPHALET FOLLETT.
(1741—1778)

"On Susquehanna's side, fair Wyoming!
Although the wild-flower on thy ruined wall
And roofless homes a sad remembrance bring
Of what thy gentle people did befall;
Yet thou wert once the loveliest land of all
That see the Atlantic wave their morn restore.
Sweet land! may I thy lost delights recall,
And paint thy Gertrude in her howers of yore,
Whose beauty was the love of Pennsylvania's shore!"

—*Gertrude of Wyoming.*

ELIPHALET FOLLETT (1741—1778) was son of Lieutenant Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715 —). American Ancestry, Vol. IV, p. 127, says: "Of Connecticut and Pennsylvania. Son of Benjamin, Jr. Born at Windham, Conn., January 16, 1741, died at Kingston, Pa., July 3, 1778, killed in the Wyoming massacre, and his wife and children struggled to Vermont. Married March 8, 1764, Elizabeth Dewey." Family records and traditions corroborate all of the foregoing and enter into details to some extent. See notice of Elizabeth Dewey in Dewey records later on. Their children were:

Martin Dewey, (1765—1831).

Charles (1767—1814).

Elizabeth (1769— —).

Eliphalet (1771—1778).

Benjamin (1774—1831).

James (1776—1832).

Eliphalet [2d] (1779—1851).

See notices of the children later on.

Just when Eliphalet (1741—1778) moved to Wyoming we do not know. The Robinson Genealogy, to which reference will be frequently made later, gives the place of birth of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) as Nine Partners (now Amenia,



Duchess County), N. Y. We have no record of the place of birth of the other children except that of Eliphalet 2d (1779—1851) at Bennington, and no records of any other events which would throw any light on Eliphalet's movements from 1765 to 1774.

In Miner's History of Wyoming, p. 155, we find: "At a town meeting legally warned and held for Westmoreland (Wyoming) March ye 1st, 1774, for choosing town officers," etc. * * * "Adjourned to March ye 2d, 1774." One hundred town officers, select men, treasurer, constables and collectors of rates, surveyors of highways, fence viewers, listers, leather sealers, grand jurors, tything men, sealers of weights and measures and key-keepers were elected. Eliphalet Follett was fourth of fifteen who "were chosen listers for ye year ensuing." This would indicate that he was not at that time a new-comer.

It is possible that he was in the company of one hundred and forty-six, in the list of thirty-five of whom appears his father's name as settling at Pittston in 1769, but it is only a matter of conjecture. One thing is sure, our family traditions show that his farm of three hundred acres of good land at Kingston, was well stocked, and his house a good one and in a desirable locality, which would indicate that he had been there for some time. The most prominent event in all our records, and that of which his descendants have thought and talked and written more than of any other circumstance in their family history, was his tragic death in the Wyoming massacre, which brought such great hardship and suffering to his widow and children.

The large American histories do not go into detail in their descriptions of this great blot on the page of British history. Numerous books have been written on the ever popular subject, but for a comprehensive idea of the massacre and the troublesome and bloody events of the years before and after, the reader is referred to Chapman's, Stone's, Miner's or

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF WYOMING.

Peck's Histories, long since out of print, but which may be found in our large libraries.

Miner's is the largest and most complete history, while Peck cites more individual anecdotes. Hollister's History of the Lackawanna Valley, Wright's Historical Sketches of Plymouth, Pa., Johnson's Wyoming Memorial, being an account in full of the great celebration, July 3, 1878, still for sale, and other works contain extended descriptions of those terrible times, but they are largely based on the earlier histories. A little work has just been published by Rev. Horace Edwin Hayden, Corresponding Secretary of the Wyoming Historical and Geological Society, Wilkes-Barre, which, though not intended to be a complete history of the massacre, is most interesting reading to descendants of the participants.

The reader who has not within reach any of the works on Wyoming may be interested in a few lines on its history, which some of our ancestors helped to make.

The valley, said by Peck to be one of the most beautiful spots in the world, twenty-one miles in length and about three in width, shut in by beautiful mountains, and with the broad Susquehanna running through it from northeast to southwest, was discovered by New England adventurers as early as 1750. Their reports of the "Paradise" set on foot schemes of settlement and "The Susquehanna Company," of which, we have seen, Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715—), was a prominent member, was formed in Connecticut in 1753, and after long and various disputes with the proprietaries of Pennsylvania, and the Indians, who claimed the land, a deed of purchase was obtained at Albany in 1754, from the five nations of Iroquois, for £2,000. The company embraced about six hundred persons (at times more), mostly of high standing and wealth, but nothing could be done until 1762, on account of Indian

ELIPHALET FOLLETT (1741-1778).

troubles, when two hundred men entered the valley, laid out farms, planted crops and went back to New England in the fall, returning in the spring with their families. We have seen that Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715— —), was in this company. They were entering upon a season of great prosperity from abundant crops, when they were attacked by a large party of savages. Miner says: "Unprepared for resistance, about twenty men fell and were scalped; the residue, men women and children, fled, in wild disorder, to the mountains. Language cannot describe the sufferings of the fugitives as they traversed the wilderness destitute of food and clothing, on their way to their former homes." More trouble with the Indians and civil war with the agents of the proprietaries of Pennsylvania constituted the history of Wyoming until 1773, when heavy immigration set in and by the end of the year 1774 about two thousand persons were in the valley. Miner, pp. 164 and 166, pictures the beautiful scene of rural happiness, the bountiful crops in the flats and large herds and flocks on the hillsides, the Puritan Sabbath, etc., in 1775, and the prompt action, in a town meeting, favoring independence, after the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill.

William Clement Bryant, in his "Captain Brant and the Old King," pp. 7 and 8, says: "The valley of the Wyoming, in the early summer of 1778, presented a scene of peaceful and sylvan beauty. Slope and lowland, on either side of the Susquehanna, were dotted with clearings and nestling cabins, the abode of contented toil, frugality and virtue. No notes of strife or discord arose from the bosom of the happy valley. Only the plaint of some wild bird; the plow-boy's careless whistle; the merry laugh and shouts of children at play; the ring of the woodman's axe; the muffled beating of some thresher's flail, and the rhythmic plash and murmur of the winding river, broke the Sabbath hush of the embowered settlement.

EXPOSED CONDITION OF WYOMING.

"Wyoming would have been the seat of unalloyed happiness but for two causes. The youth and chivalry of the pioneers had, in response to the trumpet-call of duty, left their homes and families to the care of aged sires and striplings, and were fighting the battles of freedom on far away fields; and, besides, there was ever an undefinable, shivering fear lest at any moment, out of the dark, mysterious forest, which begirt the settlement, there might emerge a murderous horde of their implacable enemies, tory and savage."

A regiment of militia was established, and in 1776 two companies of Continentals were sent to join Washington. The six nations became allies of the British and Wyoming was dangerously exposed.

Chapman, p. 120, says: "Regular garrison duty was performed in the several fortifications by classes of the militia in successive order; in addition to which a patrol called the "Scout" was established through the valley which was on duty night and day in succession, exploring all thickets and unfrequented grounds in search of any lurking enemy which might have come to disturb their peace or spy out the land."

Irving says: "While hostilities were going on in the customary form along the Atlantic borders, Indian warfare, in all its atrocity, was going on in the interior. The British post at Niagara was its cradle. It was the common rallying place of tories, refugees, savage warriors and other desperadoes of the frontiers, and here was concerted the memorable incursion into the Valley of Wyoming, suggested by tory refugees who had until recently inhabited it."

This would indicate that the scheme was laid by whites in a spirit of revenge, but since Irving's *Life of Washington* was written, discoveries have been made in regard to Wyoming Valley history, as may be shown in the following letter:

ELIPHALET FOLLETT (1741-1778).

WYOMING HISTORICAL AND GEOLOGICAL
SOCIETY,

Office of the Corresponding Secretary,

WILKES-BARRE, PA., November 15, 1895.

Major Harry P. Ward, Columbus, O.:

Dear Sir:—In regard to the statement that Irving makes as to the causes of the massacre, we are now satisfied that it was not caused by the Tories who once inhabited the valley, though they did second the vile deed. You are right in stating what was not believed until proven lately, that it was the Indians that perpetrated the massacre of 1763. The facts seem to be these: The Six Nations always claimed the Wyoming Valley. When it was possessed by the white men they protested against it in no measured terms. In May, 1763, the Six Nations sent an embassy to the Colony of Connecticut and asked that the valley be left uninhabited by their colonists. They protested that it was their land and that they had the first right to it, and had never relinquished that right. The minutes of this conference have lately been discovered and will soon be published, but the fact has escaped the historians. The embassy returned home determined to take revenge if their protest was unheeded. Hence the massacre of 1763, after which the Pennsylvania militia, who pursued the Indians, destroyed all that was left at Wyoming, because they learned that the Indians intended to come back and take away what they had left. When Connecticut again occupied the valley, the Six Nations resolved on the destruction of the settlement. You will note in my pamphlet that Kayingwaurto took his action regardless of the English, and Butler was sent to him after the British learned of his purpose, and that he virtually ignored Butler, who had no control or command of the Indians. Claus in his MSS. states that it was Brant's plan of operation that he should take Cherry Valley, while Old King took Wyoming, and this plan was purely of Indian origin, and the Tories were

CAUSES OF THE MASSACRE.

simply factors in carrying out the scheme which they did not themselves suggest or foster. The Tories from the Westmoreland section were found in Butler's rangers and were thus glad of the opportunity to take revenge on the valley people. The invasion was simply a part of a general plan to make simultaneous attacks on the weak parts of the frontier, and the absence of the two Continental companies from the valley made this a very important objective point. Thus the Six Nations were seeking to recover possession of their lost territory. I have lately had the opportunity to examine a scarce scrap book of papers by Mr. Cruikshanks, of Canada, on the British side, that confirms all I have said. Of course the price of scalps was a fruitful source of all such invasions by the Indians. If I can serve you further, command me.

Cordially Yours,

HORACE EDWIN HAYDEN.

Rev. Hayden, in his "Wyoming Massacre," gives the petition to Congress in 1837, from which the following are extracts: "During the revolutionary war Wyoming stood an extreme frontier, an outpost, on the borders of the settlement of the savage enemy. To Sunbury, the nearest inhabited place down the Susquehanna, it was sixty miles; through the Great Swamp it was sixty miles, a pathless wilderness, to Bethlehem or Easton. The warlike and bloody Mohawks, Senecas and others of the Six Nations, occupied all the upper branches of the Susquehanna and were within a few hours sail of our settlements, which were exposed to constant attacks. Thus exposed, we stood as a shield to all settlements below us. In this situation, every man might well be considered as enlisted for and during the whole war. There was no peace, no security at Wyoming. The husbandman took his hoe in one hand and his rifle in the other, to the cornfield. Several forts were built and garrisons steadily maintained. This was done by the people, by the militia, by common consent and common exertion."

ELIPHALET FOLLETT (1741-1778).

In mentioning the Six Nations the following appears: "It was the most powerful and dreadful confederacy of Indians the white man had ever encountered on this continent. Their victorious arms reached to the Catawbias of Carolina, and dealt out bolts of vengeance upon the Mohicans of New England."

It has been stated by some historians that Brant, the Mohawk, was the Indian leader. Both Peck and Hayden show that such was not the case, Hayden proving beyond any doubt that a powerful Seneca chief, Kayingwaurto, was the leader of the savages.

Frantic appeals for aid were sent to both Congress and Connecticut, and the Continentals from Wyoming, who were with Washington, begged to be allowed to return to the defense of their homes, but all in vain. Colonel Zebulon Butler and a few other Continental officers obtained leave of absence or resigned and did get back to their homes and took command of the military organizations.

THE WYOMING MASSACRE. (July 3, 1778)

"And must I change my song? and must I show,
Sweet Wyoming! the day when thou wert doomed,
Guiltless, to mourn thy loveliest bowers laid low!
When, where of yesterday a garden bloomed,
Death overspread his pall, and blackening ashes gloomed!"

—*Gertrude of Wyoming.*

JUNE 30, 1778, Colonel John Butler, tory, with 400 Provincials and 600 or 700 Indians, entered the head of the valley for the purpose of driving out the settlers. Colonel Zebulon Butler, the patriot, took, by common consent, command of the little patriot force, which consisted, according to Peck, of "two hundred and thirty enrolled men," in which it is supposed Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778) served as an enlisted man, probably in Captain Aholiab Buck's Kingston company, and "seventy old people, boys, civil magistrates and other volunteers." It is possible that Benjamin Follett (1715—) served as one of the old men in some capacity, and that Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) served somewhere as a boy, although no record has as yet come to light showing the exact whereabouts of any of the Folletts on that day. The rolls of the six companies of militia who went into the battle do not seem to be in existence, but we know beyond any shadow of doubt that Eliphalet (1741—1778) was killed in the massacre from his name being on the monument as among the slain, and none were slain except those who were in the battle, or killed a day or so before. The fact that the will of Benjamin was probated 1788, and the general understanding among

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.

the historians that every man who was able to fight did his share of duty in some manner or other, would lead to the supposition that he too was an actor in the awful scenes of that day, even though he may not have been in the battle.

Had the younger officers deferred to the better judgment of the older ones in the council of war held in Forty Fort, whither most of the settlers had fled for safety, the patriot force would have remained in the fort and withstood a siege, in the hope of receiving sufficient reinforcement in Captain Spaulding's company of Continentals, who were then marching to their relief. But the majority were in favor of giving battle to the invaders, and accordingly they marched out several miles to the northward to the music of "St. Patrick's Day in the Morning," and, in a well-arranged line of battle attacked the enemy. It would take a far more gifted pen than this to show with any degree of justice how those noble women endured their mental agonies while their husbands and sons went forth to oppose that horde of red savages and white Tories, who were the equals of the red men in cruelty; and how that untrained band of heroes fought like tigers for the lives of their loved ones, their homes and their all, until the fatal misunderstanding of a command to the company on the left flank to fall back to another position. The steady and well-directed fire of the right wing was driving in the British left, when hundreds of Indians, yelling like demons, sprang upon the left flank company, who, at that critical moment, mistook the command "fall back" for "retreat." In an instant there ensued a wild rush for the river, some distance to the east, the Indians using tomahawk and scalping knife with horrible effect. To them it was a race for scalps and victims for torture, to the patriots a race for life. Many reached the river only to be shot down in their efforts to swim to the east bank. Very few escaped. Eliphalet Follett was one of a large number who

BATTLE AND FLIGHT.

were shot in the water by tories. Probably his scalp was taken along with the rest.

Hayden states that the tory Butler reported 227 scalps taken at Wyoming, for which \$10 each was paid by the British, \$2,270 in all.

Irving in his *Life of Washington*, Vol. III, p. 435, states: "According to the British accounts, upwards of four hundred of the yeomanry of Wyoming were slain," * * * and "upwards of five thousand persons fled," etc. This British account was, no doubt, exaggerated. Irving adds: "It was one of the most atrocious outrages perpetrated throughout the war; and as usual, the tories concerned in it were the most vindictive and merciless of the savage crew."

In the petition to Congress, before mentioned as published by Rev. Hayden, the following appears: "In the annals of that fearful but glorious conflict (the Revolution) not a page recounts a livelier devotion of the cause of liberty, or depicts a bloodier field, deeper sufferings or more extensive losses of property. All America and Europe were filled, at the time, with the melancholy details."

Miner says, p. 224: "Every captain that led a company into action was slain, and in every instance fell on or near the line. * * * They fought bravely; every man and officer did his duty; but they were overpowered by threefold their force." Peck says: "It was a dreadful hour. The few old men who were left in the fort, and the women and children, lined the bank of the river with throbbing hearts, listening to the noise of the battle. * * * More than two hundred of the patriots fell in this fearful conflict. * * * Many were first made prisoners and then massacred in the most cruel and barbarous manner by the savages. * * * At night-fall the fugitives came into the fort, exhausted with the toils and terrors of the day. But, oh, how many husbands and sons came not! The sadness of that night will never be adequately sketched."

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.

Quackenbos tells of a Captain Bidlack being thrown alive on burning coals where he was held with pitchforks until he expired. Hayden shows that this Captain Bidlack had been wounded on the line previous to his capture. Peck mentions a boy who went into the fight by his father's side, and was taken prisoner and put on the points of four bayonets planted in the ground and roasted to death by a slow fire built under him.

On July 5th, after articles of capitulation had been signed and personal protection guaranteed by Colonel Butler (tory) the Indians entered the fort, and after a short time Butler declared he could do nothing with the Indians and left. Among the numerous instances of beastly cruelty related by Peck, the following, which occurred after the battle, is given as being a case probably somewhat parallel to that of Eliphalet Follett: "Elijah Shoemaker (Lieutenant of Captain Aholiab Buck's company, in which it is supposed Eliphalet Follett served) was seen wading in the river by one Windecker, a tory, who had been treated by Shoemaker with the kindness with which a father would treat a son. Windecker said to him, 'Come out Shoemaker.' 'I'm afraid,' said Shoemaker, 'you will give me up to the Indians.' 'No,' said Windecker, 'I will save you, they shan't hurt you.' But no sooner did Shoemaker come within his reach, than the perfidious wretch dashed his tomahawk into his head and set his body afloat. The body was taken up at the fort, and Mrs. Shoemaker, with a child in her arms, came down to the water's edge to be agonized with the sight of the mangled corpse of her husband." We know that Eliphalet Follett was shot by a tory in the river. Mrs. Hannah Clark, his grand-daughter (the writer's great aunt), now aged 92 years, states that her grandmother has told her that his body was discovered some days after the battle, in the river, a most horrible sight, entirely unrecognizable, it being identified by his silver knee buckles. She further states that her

DOMESTIC SUFFERING.

grandmother was in the fort, and their house, a fine two-story log building, right on the bank of the Susquehanna, furnished in elegant style for that day, with embroidered bed curtains, etc., was so near that she could see the feathers fly from her beds which the Indians and tories were ripping open. She also saw them take her thirteen silk aprons of various colors, red, green, etc., and rip them into ribbons. The boy, Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), begged for the family bible, of a tory, who was, like other tories, painted like an Indian, calling the tory by name. Calling him by name so incensed the tory that he raised his hatchet and said he would kill him if he called his name again. He succeeded in getting the bible, but other things that they begged for they did not get. They had to beg for the old mare that was worthless to the boodlers and one bed to use as a saddle. An incident, showing the actions of the Indians after the massacre, is related by a Mrs. Myers in Peck's History: "They took our feather beds, and, ripping open the ticks, flung out the feathers, and crammed in their plunder, consisting mostly of fine clothing, and throwing them over their horses, went off. A squaw came riding up with ribbons stringing from her head over her horse's tail. Some of the squaws would have on two or three bonnets generally back side before. One rode off astride of mother's side-saddle, that, too, wrong end foremost, and mother's scarlet cloak hanging before her, being tied at the back of her neck." A few days later the homes were burned.

Bancroft, Vol. V, p. 280, says: "The Senecas roamed over the surrounding country, adepts in murder and devastation. The British leader boasted in his report that his party had burnt a thousand houses and every mill. * * * The ancient affection for England was washed out in blood."

Quackenbos says: "The unfortunate people of Wyoming were compelled to flee from their once happy valley to distant and securer settlements.

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.

Few survived the horrors of the flight. Some escaped the red man's knife only to find a slower death from exposure and fatigue. Others dragging their weary limbs they knew not whither, lost their way on the mountains or hid in caverns till starvation ended their sufferings. Distracted mothers hurried their children through the wilderness, and when their little ones fainted on the way and died, folded the lifeless bodies to their hearts, and bore them many a toilsome mile to save them from the hungry wolves. Lovely Wyoming was desolate."

Miner, p. 231, tells a story, related by a young girl, who saw the circumstance, of a widow, who, sitting by the roadside, had learned the death of her husband: "Six children were on the ground near her. The group, the very image of despair, for they were without food; just at that moment a man was seen riding rapidly towards them from the settlement. It was Mr. Hollenback. Foreseeing the probable destitution, he had providently loaded his horse with bread and was hastening back, like an angel of mercy to their relief. Cries and tears of gratitude and welcome went up to heaven. He imparted a morsel to each and hastened on to the relief of others." Could this widow have been Elizabeth Dewey Follett? Such must have been her condition.

The Follett mother and her six children struggled on to Vermont (Mrs. Clark says, to Bennington), where one child died from the effects of the journey, and where Eliphalet (second) was born but a few months later. It would be impossible to describe the hardships of that long and dreary journey, the mother's sorrow, pity for her little ones, and bitter feelings over her widowhood and her abject poverty. On the journey she fell and broke her arm, and they were three days in the woods before assistance could be gotten. Martin carried and led his little brother James, two years of age, who was barefooted, until he had an opportunity, when stopping at the house of a tory, to take a pair of shoes that

RETREAT OF ELIPHALET FOLLETT'S WIDOW.

were near the door and, unknown to his mother, conceal them until they were far enough on their way to be sure his mother would not send him back with them. The writer's grandmother, Persis Follett Parker, has said that her grandmother, Elizabeth Dewey Follett, had told her that they travelled a hundred miles with the old horse and were then met by friends from Bennington, Vermont, who had heard of the disaster and had come in wagons to their assistance. It is not known just who these friends were, but it is supposed that they were some of Rev. Jedediah Dewey's family. Mrs. Clark says that her father, Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), told her that his little brother James' feet became so scratched and sore, on the rough roads, that they often bled, before he appropriated the tory shoes. They never returned to Wyoming.

A silver spoon, which was the property of Elizabeth Dewey Follett, is now in possession of Miss Annette Ward, of Columbus, Ohio, and a beautiful pocket of the colonial style, which she made when but seven years of age, and which she used at the time of the massacre to carry her valuable trinkets, etc., in, concealed under her dress skirt, is now owned by Mr. Truman Woodworth, of Carey, Ohio.

In the fall of 1778 Colonel Zebulon Butler (patriot), with Captain Spaulding's company of Continentals and a few settlers returned to the valley. On October 22, more than three and a half months after the battle, the remains of some ninety of the slain were gathered together and buried in a common grave. It was impossible to identify them, with few exceptions, especially as many had been scalped and mutilated.

In the summer of 1779 General Washington sent General Sullivan with some four thousand troops into the country of the Six Nations for the purpose of ridding the frontier of the hostile Indians and tories. The same Colonel John Butler (tory) who executed the Wyoming massacre, made a resistance with

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.

nearly two thousand of his red and white savages, but was routed. It took the four thousand troops thirty days of actual work to lay waste the Indian country. Their glorious fields ripe with the harvests, their splendid orchards, their homes, their everything were swept away by the firm and terrible hand of destruction and revenge. Wyoming and Cherry Valley were avenged.

The location of the grave was unknown until 1832, when a movement was put on foot for the erection of a monument. Some ten years after, the monument, a granite pile sixty-two and a half feet high, costing some eight thousand dollars, was erected on the spot of the grave.

On the front slab is the following:

Near this spot was fought
On the afternoon of Friday, the third day of
July, 1778,

THE BATTLE OF WYOMING,

In which a small band of patriotic Americans,
Chiefly the undisciplined, the youthful and the aged,
Spared by inefficiency from the distant ranks of the Republic.
Led by Col. Zebulon Butler and Col. Nathan Denison,
With a courage that deserved success,

Boldly met and bravely fought
A combined British, Tory and Indian force
of thrice their number.
Numerical superiority alone gave success to the invader.
And wide spread havoc, desolation and ruin
Marked his savage and bloody footsteps through the Valley.

THIS MONUMENT,
Commemorative of these events,
and of the actors in them,
has been erected

OVER THE BONES OF THE SLAIN
By their descendants and others, who gratefully
appreciated
the services and sacrifices of their patriot
ancestors.



THE WYOMING MONUMENT.

BY PERMISSION OF DR. F. C. JOHNSON, WILKES BARRE, PA.

53
Boston
Public Library

THE MONUMENT.

On the southwest and northeast slabs are inscribed the names of those who were killed at the time of the massacre. All but a very few of these names were put on at the time of the erection of the monument, the others having been added since.

DULCE ET DECORUM EST PRO PATRIA MORI.

SLAIN IN BATTLE.

FIELD OFFICERS,

Lt. Col. George Dorrance,

Major Jonathan Waite Garrett,

CAPTAINS,

James Bidlack, jr.,
Aholiab Buck,
Robert Durkee,

Rezin Geer,
Dethick Hewitt,
Wm. McKarrachen,

Samuel Ransom,
Lazarus Stewart,
James Wigdon,
Asaph Whittlesey.

LIEUTENANTS,

A. Atherton,
Aaron Gaylord,
Perrin Ross,
Lazarus Stewart, jr.,

Flavius Waterman,
Stoddart Bowen,
Timothy Pierce,

Elijah Shoemaker,
Asa Stevens,
James Wells.

ENSIGNS,

Jeremiah Bigford,
Silas Gore,

Jonathan Otis,
Asa Gore,

Titus Hinman,
William White.

PRIVATES,

Jabez Atherton,
Christopher Avery,
Ackke,

A. Benedict,
Jabez Beers,
Samuel Bigford,
David Bixby,
Elias Bixby,
John Boyd,
John Brown,
Thomas Brown,
William Buck,
Joseph Budd,
Amos Bullock,
Asa Bullock,
Henry Bush,
Eson Brockway,
John Caldwell,

D. Denton,
Anderson Dana,
Conrad Davenport,
George Downing,
James Devine,
Levi Dunn,
William Dunn,
Ducher,

Benjamin Finch,
Daniel Finch,
John Finch,
Elisha Fish,
Cornelius Fitchett,
Eliphalet Follett,
Thomas Faxon,
John Franklin,
Stephen Fuller,
Thomas Fuller,

Joshua Landon,
Daniel Lawrence,
William Lawrence,
Francis Ledyard,
James Lock,
Conrad Lowe,
Jacob Lowe,
William Lester,

C. McCartee,
Nicholas Manville,
Nero Matthewson,
Alexander McMillan,
Job Marshall,
Andrew Millard,
John Murphy,
Robert McIntire,
Joseph Ogden,

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.

Josiah Carman,	George Gore,	Ahel Palmer,
Joseph Cary,	Gardner,	Silas Parke,
Joel Church,	Green,	William Parker,
William Cofferin,		John Pierce,
James Cofferin,	Benjamin Hatch,	Henry Pencil,
Samuel Cole,	William Hammon,	Noah Pettebone, jr.,
Isaac Campbelle,	Silas Harvey,	
Campbell,	Samuel Hutchinson,	Jeremiah Ross, jr.,
Robert Comstock,	Cyprian Hehard,	Elisha Richards,
Kingsley Comstock,	Levi Hicks,	William Reynolds,
Brothers {	John Hutchins,	Elias Roberts,
	James Hopkins,	Timothy Rose,
	Nathaniel Howard,	
Christopher Courtright,	Zipporah Hihhard,	Ahram Shaw,
John Courtright,	Elijah Inman,	James Shaw,
Anson Corey,	Israel Inman,	Joseph Shaw,
Jenks Corey,		Constant Searle,
Rufus Corey,		Ahel Seely,
Joseph Crocker,	Samuel Jackson,	Levi Spencer,
Samuel Crocker,	Robert Jameson,	Eleazer Sprague.
	Joseph Jennings,	Aaron Stark,
Jabez Darling,	Henry Johnson,	Daniel Stark,
		Josiah Spencer,
Darius Spofford,	John Van Wie,	Eson Wilcox,
James Spencer,		John Williams,
Joseph Staples,	Elihu Waters,	John Ward,
Reuben Staples,	Jonathan Weeks,	John Wilson,
Rufus Stevens,	Bartholomew Weeks,	Parker Wilson.
James Stevenson,	Philip Weeks,	William Woodring,
Nailer Sweed,	Peter Wheeler,	Aziha Williams,
	Stephen Whiton,	Wade,
Gamaliel Truesdale,	Ehen Wilcox,	Ozias Yale,
Ichabod Tuttle,	Elihu Williams, jr.,	
Abram Vangorder,	Rufus Williams,	Gershom Prince, colored.

Lieut. Boyd, killed at Forty Fort after the Battle.

The name of Eliphalet Follett is found in the lists as given by Miner and Peck. We may therefore believe that his name was among those inscribed at the building of the monument.

The bones of the slain, so far as recovered, rest in a chamber in the base of the monument.

The names of those who participated in the battle and survived are on a slab over a door leading to the vault, on the southeast side, as follows:

INSCRIPTIONS ON THE MONUMENT.

COLONELS,

Zebulon Butler, Nathan Denison.

LIEUTENANTS,

Daniel Gore. Timothy Howe.

ENSIGNS,

Daniel Downing, Matthias Hollenback

SERGEANTS,

Jabez Fish, Phineas Spafford, Gates.

PRIVATES,

John Abbott,	Thomas Fuller,	Joseph Morse,
Gideon Baldwin,	John Garrett,	Thomas Neill,
Zera Beach,	Samuel Gore,	
Rufus Bennett,	Lemuel Gustin,	Josiah Pell,
Solomon Bennett,	James Green,	Phineas Pierce,
Elisha Blackman,		Abraham Pike,
	Lebbeus Hammond,	
Nathan Carey,	Jacob Haldron,	John N. Skinner,
Samuel Carey,	Elisha Harris,	Giles Slocum,
George Cooper,	Ebenezer Heberd,	Walter Spencer,
	William Heberd,	Edward Spencer,
Joseph Elliott,		Amos Stafford,
	Richard Inman,	Roger Searle,
Samuel Finch,	David Inman,	
Roswell Franklin,		Cherrick Westbrook
Hugh Forsman,	John Jamison,	Eleazer West,
	Henry Lickers,	Daniel Washburn.

PRISONERS TAKEN FROM WYOMING,

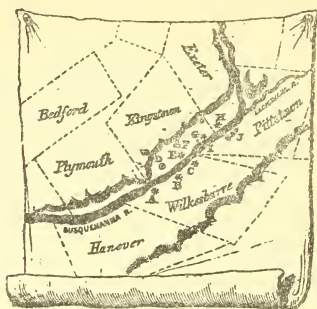
John Gardner,	Daniel Wallen,	Elisha Wilcox,
Daniel Carr,	Daniel Rosencrans,	Pierce.
Samuel Carey,		

KILLED ON APPROACH TO WYOMING,

William Crooks,	Stukeley Harding,	William Martin,
Miner Robbins,	James Hadsall,	Quocko, [colored.]
Benjamin Harding,	James Hadsall, jr.,	

On July 3d, 1878, a celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the massacre was held in the Wyoming Valley, which, in its way, was one of the grandest celebrations in the history of our country. Fifty thousand visitors attended, including President Hayes and many of the highest officials in the nation, and the exercises lasted for several days.

THE WYOMING MASSACRE, JULY 3, 1778.



THE WYOMING VALLEY OR WESTMORELAND, 1778.

The above map is reproduced from Peck's History, from which the following explanation is also extracted:

- A. Fort Durkee.
- B. Wyoming or Wilkes-Barre Fort.
- C. Fort Ogden.
- D. Village of Kingston.
- E. Forty Fort.
- F. Battle-ground, site of Monument.
- G. Wintermoot's Fort. The dot below G marks Queen Esther's Rock, where that female savage is said to have brained nearly a score of victims during the night of July 3rd, in revenge for the killing of her son.
- H. Fort Jenkins.
- I. Monocasy Island.
- J. Three Pittstown Stockades.

The distances from Wilkes-Barre bridge of to-day are as follows: Fort Durkee, half mile; Fort Ogden, three and a half miles; Pittstown Stockades, eight miles; Forty Fort, three and a half miles; Monument, five and a half miles; Queen Esther's Rock, six and a half miles; Wintermoot's Fort and Fort Jenkins, eight miles; Kingston, half mile.

CHILDREN OF ELIPHALET FOLLETT.
(1741—1778.)

FIRST.—Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778). See chapter on Captain Martin Dewey Follett.

Second.—Charles Follett (1767—1814), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born July 16, 1767. Place of birth not known, but supposed to be Nine Partners, now Amenia, N. Y. Was eleven years of age at the time of the Wyoming massacre. Jennings' History of Bennington, p. 150, says that he married Hannah, daughter of Colonel Samuel Robinson, whose wife was Esther, daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775). They had one son, who died without issue. Charles Follett (1767—1814) was a captain in the regular army in the war of 1812, taking sick in the service and returning to his home in Cambridge, Vt., where he died September 4 (one record gives it September 14), 1814. His name is found in Hammersly's Regular Army Register, 1779 to 1879, p. 73, as "Captain, Tenth U. S. Infantry, commissioned 12 March 1812." His regiment, according to Lossing's Field Book of the War of 1812, saw no little service in the Plattsburgh campaign.

Third.—Elizabeth Follett (1769— —), daughter of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born May 4, 1769. Place of birth not known, but supposed to be Nine Partners, N. Y. Was at Wyoming, Pa., at the time of the massacre in 1778, being nine years of age. Married Deacon William Reynolds, a Baptist, and lived at Cambridge, Vt. She was the mother of seven or eight children, of whom no records are at

CHILDREN OF ELIPHALET FOLLETT (1741-1778).

band. Mrs. Clark remembers the names of four of them, Henry, Betsey, Martin and Fanny.

Fourth.—Eliphalet Follett (1771—1778), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born May 4, 1771, probably at Nine Partners, N. Y., but possibly at Wyoming, Pa. Died August 30, 1778, probably from the effects of the journey after the Wyoming massacre. Place of death was undoubtedly Bennington, Vt.

Fifth.—Benjamin Follett (1774—1831), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born July 22, 1774, undoubtedly at Wyoming, Pa., as we find his father elected to a town office there previous to this date. At the time of the massacre he was four years of age. He married Mercy Noble, who may have been a relative of his step-father, "Captain Eli Noble, Esquire." His children were: Benjamin, Leodwick, Eliza and Olive. Mrs. Clark states that he took small-pox while in Montreal on one occasion, returning to his home, which was turned into a pest house. This was, Mrs. Clark thinks, in 1803. The disease left him badly pitted.

In the war of 1812 he was lieutenant of his brother's company of Enosburgh militia. His name is one of those attached to the celebrated remonstrance addressed to Governor Martin Chittenden in November, 1813. He "moved west," settling in the vicinity of Cleveland, Ohio. No records concerning his children have been found.

Sixth.—James Follett (1776—1832), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born July 2, 1776, at Wyoming, Pa. From all accounts he must have suffered much on the retreat from Wyoming valley, being only two years of age at the time. He married Sally Kelly, who was born July 2, 1792, and who died March 6, 1829. He died August 22, 1832, of cholera, at Buffalo, N. Y. His children were:

Charles D., born August 16, 1813, died September 8, 1814.

SOME GRANDCHILDREN.

James D., born June 24, 1815, now living in Chicago. His children, now living, are Mary (Mrs. Dean), James D., Jr., Charles L. and William S.

Sarah C., born April 24, 1817, married Charles C. Morse, lived in Medina, O., and died December 21, 1887.

Martin P., born April 26, 1820, now living in Chicago.

Charles L., born May 7, 1822, died of cholera August 18, 1849, at Huntington, Ind.

William R., born March 25, 1824, died March 13, 1831.

Nerina A., born May 18, 1826, married Mr. Perry and is now living with her brother, James D. Follett, in Chicago.

Stephen D., born November 11, 1828, died March 27, 1831.

When James Follett (1776—1832) lost his wife in 1829, he took his seven living children, the oldest of whom was under thirteen years of age, and the youngest not quite four months old, to the home of his brother, Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), who, our traditions tell us, had always been an affectionate older brother, to whom his brothers and sister could come in their times of trouble.

Seventh.—Eliphalet Follett (1779— —), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), was born at Bennington, Vt., January 10, 1779, six months after the death of his father in the Wyoming massacre. His children were Dewey, Abel, Julia, Clemence, Theoda, Betsey, Tryfena and Mary, but nothing much seems to be known of them now. The family removed to Bellevue, O. Several of the daughters married men of great wealth. Mrs. Platt, of Columbus, O., states that she had a visiting acquaintance with some of them in her younger days, and that she was in Paris at the time one of them was married there in great splendor. The writer's grandmother, Mrs. Parker, also had a visiting acquaintance with them many years ago. Eliphalet Follett (1779— —) married his second wife and, after her death, a third.

CAPTAIN MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT.
(1765—1831)



MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT (1765—1831), son of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778) was born, according to family records, July 4, 1765. The Robinson Genealogy gives the place of his birth as Nine Partners (now Amenia, Dutchess County), New York, just west of the Connecticut line. The next record we have of him is his connection with the retreat from the Wyoming valley after the massacre in 1778. While we have no positive assurance that he actually participated in the battle of July 3d, 1778, we have reason to suppose that he did his share of duty at that time, in some capacity, as the histories of the Wyoming valley give many instances of the deeds of young boys at that time. The younger boys who were too young to be in the companies with the men, it seems had formed a company by themselves under the command of a boy of fifteen years of age. We find no record of this company going into the battle as a company, but the various accounts show that at least two such boys were killed in the massacre, and that one escaped by running. Stone, p. 188, says: "Captain Aholiab Buck and his son, aged only fourteen, were both slain." We read of a boy less than twelve years of age who was too young to carry a musket, but drove a team hauling logs while one of the forts was being built. From all accounts we come to but one conclusion, that the settlement of Wyoming stood together as a unit in the common defence, the old men, the women and the older children all doing their share, while the men were doing military duty. The hardships of the retreat of Martin Dewey Follett's mother from the valley, in which it would appear, from what

A REVOLUTIONARY SOLDIER.

meager records we have, that he was of great assistance, have been mentioned in connection with Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778).

The next records in order of their dates were obtained from the Adjutant General of Vermont, and are here given in full.

STATE OF VERMONT,
ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
BURLINGTON, *December 7, 1893.*

I hereby certify that the following is a correct transcript from the records on file in this office, regarding soldiers who served in the Revolutionary war. Extract from a "Pay Roll of Lieutenant Jon'a Scott's Company in Col. Sam'l Herrick's Reg't of Militia in the service of the American United States raised for the purpose of guarding the public stores in Bennington, by order of General Stark to his Excellency Gov. Chittenden, engaged and discharged at several different times from June 30, 1778, to Jan. 4, 1779," we find that Martin Follett served as a private, 79 days.

Also from a "Pay Roll of Capt. Joseph Safford's Company of Militia in Col. Eben'r Walbridge's Reg't, in an alarm to Castleton, commencing the 14th Oct. 1781 and ending the 31st," it appears that Martin Follett served, as a private, eleven days.

(Signed)

T. S. PECK,

[Seal.]

Adj't and Insp'r Gen'l.

STATE OF VERMONT,
ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
BURLINGTON, *December 7, 1893.*

I hereby certify that the following is a correct transcript from the records on file in this office regarding soldiers who served in the Revolutionary war. Extract from "A Pay Roll of Capt. Thomas Sawyer's Company of Militia, raised for the defence of the Northern Frontier of the United States," it appears that Martin D. Follett served, as a private, from May 19, to June 28, 1779, one month and eleven days.

(Signed)

T. S. PECK,

[Seal.]

Adj't and Insp'r Gen'l.

CAPT. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT (1765-1831).

STATE OF VERMONT,
ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
MONTPELIER, Dec. 8, A. D. 1893.

Major Harry P. Ward, Columbus, O.:

Sir:—Replying to yours of the 4th, enclosed please find certificates of service of your ancestors, Martin D. Follett and John Fassett, Jr. The three months' service at Plattsburgh is all I can find of M. D. Follett as captain. The service of the same man in 1779 does not seem to me improbable, although he could have been but fourteen years old. I am assured by the State Librarian and Assistant Secretary of State, men who know a great deal about Revolutionary records, that they know many cases where men served as early as fourteen. I find also further service of Martin Follett without any "D." I have no doubt this is the same man; the records are so full of mistakes, are left in such an indefinite way, the names of the same men spelled in several different ways, initials left out entirely; but I have made out these certificates separately, as you may not wish to accept the last.

With thanks for fee, Respectfully,

MRS. JAS. S. PECK,
Ass't in Adj't Gen'l's Office.

Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) married Persis Fassett (see Fassett records) March 9, 1790, at Cambridge, Vt., the marriage ceremony being performed by the bride's father. Their children, mention of whom will be made later on, were:

John Fassett (1791—1863).

Martin Dewey (1793—1864).

Henry [Harry] (1795—1875).

Elizabeth [Betsey] (1797—1884).

Sally (1799—1804).

Hannah (1803—living).

Eliphalet (1805—1887).

Charles (1808—1808).

Persis (1809—1893).

James (1811—living).

SETTLEMENT OF ENOSBURGH.

In the Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 154, is found a long list of the first settlers of Enosburgh, Vt., in which the name, Hon. Martin D. Follett (1765—1831) is third and that of Benjamin Follett (1774—1831) fourth, and on page 133, same volume, it appears that Martin D. Follett was clerk of the first Proprietors' meeting September 8, 1795, held at the house of Joseph Baker, Esq., in Bakersfield, at which time:

"Chose Jedediah Hyde, Stephen House, Samuel D. Sheldon, Levi House, Amos Fassett, Joseph Baker and Martin D. Follett a committee to allot said township at their discretion, after they have reviewed said township thoroughly."

The next Proprietors' meeting was held in Cambridge September 9, 1795, at which was "Voted that said committee lay out ten acres in center of said town of Enosburgh for a public parade," etc. Sundry meetings were subsequently held, but the meeting for organization of the town was held in Enosburgh March 19, 1798, at the house of Samuel Little. At this meeting Charles Follett was elected one of the Selectmen, and it was voted "That Moses Farrar be constable, that Benjamin Follett be surveyor of highways, that Josiah Terrell be hog-reefe. Voted, that the swine shall not run at large from the 6th of May until the 20th of October," "which last vote was doubtless designed to give all swine the privilege of beech-nutting, which was quite an object in those days." "The first deed on record bears date of April 1, 1797, by Amos Fassett to Benjamin Fassett, executed at Bennington, from which town several families emigrated to Enosburgh in that and the following years." Thompson, in his Gazetteer of Vermont, page 67, says of Enosburgh: "The settlement of this township was commenced in the spring of 1797 by Amos Fassett, Stephen House, Martin D. Follett and others." It is quite probable from the foregoing notices that Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) removed from Cambridge to Enosburgh during or about the year 1797.

CAPT. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT (1765-1831).

It is possible that he did as many others did, spent much of his time at Enosburgh, clearing and building a house, before he brought his family on. His first house in Enosburgh, in which all but the first four children were born, was built of logs and contained two large rooms and a loft, which was reached by a ladder, and a bed-room and large pantry were soon added.

We read the following in regard to Enosburgh in *Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, Vol. II, p. 157:

"As in all New England forests, game was abundant. A haunch of venison was considered as necessary for the season of thanksgiving (which was always duly observed) as the turkey. The early autumn snows were the signal for the annual deer-hunting. Wolves and foxes were also numerous, and were the terror of the sheep-fold and poultry yard. The black bear was the lord of the forest; bold and sneaking in his movements, he occasioned excessive maternal solicitude, and was a terrible brute in the estimation of little children."

Tradition says that Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) was the first man to mark the trees through the dense forests that lay between Enosburgh and the St. Lawrence. Just how true this may be we do not know, but we do know that he was accustomed to go to Montreal, a distance of perhaps seventy miles, to sell the produce of the farm and to buy his supplies, and that his course was, for some distance through the forests, marked by cuts on trees which he had made himself on his first trip to Montreal, in order that he might find his way back. His son James tells an interesting story of accompanying him, assisting in driving some sheep, on one of these trips. He says they went to a place called La Prairie, which was about ten miles from the city, and in winter, when the river was frozen, it was customary to travel that much of the distance on the ice, making it the easiest part of the journey. But in stormy weather it was not so easy. The writer's grand-

EARLY ENOSBURGH.

father, John Parker (1807—1891) told of one unpleasant experience when, going from near Enosburgh to Montreal by sled with his stepfather, Andrew Comings, they lost their way in a blinding snowstorm and nearly perished with the cold. One of their neighbors lost his life on the river while making just such a trip.

The Follett farm was situated in one of the most beautiful valleys of the picturesque Green Mountains, the little Trout river running through it. This valley is in the northwestern corner of the state, not many miles from the eastern shore of Lake Champlain and very near the Canadian border. The home, after 1812, was a large brick farm house of the typical old New England style with squared walls and great open fire-places. We are told that it made a jolly home for a happy, affectionate and large family, and was the scene of many a happy gathering, church meeting or singing school, for the Folletts and Fassetts and their neighbors, the Hopkinses, were singers, and it was noted as a place of entertainment for the ministers and missionaries who so frequently traveled to and fro in that country, for the father, although not a church member, took a lively interest in church matters, and had a fondness for entertaining ministers. Mr. B. D. Hopkins writes that his father's brother, Jedediah Dewey Hopkins, told him of one occasion, when he was a boy, how he made a tour of the neighborhood to notify the people that Rev. Mr. Wooster would hold service at Judge Follett's.

On page 135, Vol. II, Vermont Historical Magazine, we are informed that anyone going to Enosburgh would be safe in calling almost any man he met "Esquire" whom he did not know to be "Captain" or "Lieutenant," so prominent was the military zeal of the town, and that in 1807 the town "voted to raise a tax of \$50.00 to fill a magazine with powder, lead," etc. Very early there was a company of troops or horse formed, and later on an artillery and a rifle

company, the rolls of which organizations, or even a single name connected therewith, the writer has been unable to find. The fact, however, that Martin Dewey Follett was chosen captain of the Enosburgh company in the war of 1812, would lead to the supposition that he must have been connected with the early military organizations of the town. On page 155 in the volume previously referred to, is found a roll of officers and soldiers in the war of 1812 from Enosburgh, as follows:

Martin D. Follett, captain; Benjamin Follett, first lieutenant; Alvin Fassett, corporal; Solomon Dodge, Henry Follett (Harry), John Flint, Samuel Hedge, Barnabas Hedge, Nathan Hedge, Talma Hendrick, Samuel Kendall. James Miller, William Miller, John Martin, Joseph Pollard, Anthony Bessee, Abijah Rice, Enoch Peas, John Osborne, Labon Brown and Asa Ladd, privates; Hiram Fassett, musician. The writer is inclined to think that "John Flint" may be a misprint for "John Follett," as errors of a similar nature are often met with.

No doubt there were changes in this company during the war. Family tradition says that John Fassett Follett (1791—1863) was enlisted and that his brother, Martin Dewey Follett, Jr. (1793—1864), sometimes substituted for him. Also that Harry (179 —1875) was "captain's waiter." Thus we see that Martin Dewey Follett, Sr., was captain, his brother was first lieutenant, and his three sons were privates, in the Enosburgh company. We have neither records nor traditions in regard to any particular campaigns or actions in which the company was or was not engaged. Mrs. Clark, nine years of age in 1812, states that, as she remembers the circumstances as they appeared to her when a child of that age, her father would go into active service for a time, possibly three months, return to the farm for about the same time, and then go back to his company, so that his service and probably that of the entire company, was broken, as occasion required.

SERVICE IN WAR OF 1812.

In Volume I, Vermont Historical Magazine, p. 672, "Governor and Council," Volume VI, p. 493, and in other histories, we find that Luther Dixon, lieutenant colonel, Martin D. Follett, captain, John Fassett, surgeon, Benjamin Follett, lieutenant, and fourteen other officers of a brigade of militia, address Martin Chittenden, Governor of Vermont, in a communication dated "Cantonment, Plattsburgh, November 15, 1813," refusing to obey orders, which it seems he had issued to them, to return to the State of Vermont, and informing him that inasmuch as they were in the service of the United States and not that of Vermont, and were not subject to his orders, they should continue in the United States service until properly discharged therefrom. The communication is very lengthy, and very courteous, but shows, nevertheless, a spirit of determination, and a feeling of dissatisfaction with the anti-war opinions of the Governor, who, it appears elsewhere, had not been elected by the people, but by the legislature, no candidate having been chosen at the election, and was unpopular.

It is probable that Martin D. Follett's company served within the borders of Vermont at different times, of which it appears there are no records, but the service outside of the State is undoubtedly covered by the following certificate:

STATE OF VERMONT,
ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
BURLINGTON, *December 7, 1893.*

I hereby certify that the following is a correct transcript from the records on file in this office, regarding soldiers who served in the war of 1812. From a muster roll of a company of militia of Vermont, under command of Martin D. Follett, in the service of the United States, commanded by Luther Dixon, lieutenant colonel commanding, it appears that Martin D. Follett served, as a captain, from September 25, 1813, three months.

(Signed)

[Seal.]

T. S. PECK,

Adj't and Insp'r Gen'l.

CAPT. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT (1765-1831).

"The Vermontese
As thick as bees,
Came swarming o'er the lake, Sirs."

That the Enosburgh company went out on the day of the battle of Plattsburgh there is no doubt, as we have heard the story from the lips of the children of Captain Follett, one of whom, Mrs. Clark, remembers distinctly the events of that day, the roar of the battle and the anxiety of her mother for those who had gone. When the news came that the British were advancing on Plattsburgh the whole country was aroused, in fact the great battle of Sunday, September 11, 1814, was to northwestern Vermont what the celebrated battle of Bennington, August 16, 1777, was to southwestern Vermont during the Revolution, although the forces engaged at Plattsburgh were far greater.

It is interesting to note the high pitch of excitement to which the invasion had brought the Vermonters in the vicinity of Lake Champlain. Lossing's Field Book of the War of 1812 says, page 856: "There was feverishness among the people and the soldiery along the Canada border, which was frequently manifested. The armed belligerents were eager for a trial of prowess." The American forces were far inferior to the British in everything but determination. Lossing says of the British force, page 857, that there were "Not less than fifteen thousand troops, chiefly veterans from Wellington's armies." Numerous skirmishes and manœuvres took place on land for many days previous to the battle, while the naval force, also inferior to that of the British, were preparing a fleet to meet the heavier fleet of the enemy. James Fennimore Cooper's History of the American Navy (a most valuable work, now out of print) gives perhaps the best description of the naval battle, which was one of the most exciting, bloody and hard-fought fights in the whole history of our navy. Commodore Macdonough was the hero of the day. Lossing, page 866, gives an account of the dinner given him a few days later, at which, after he

THE BATTLE OF PLATTSBURGH.

had left, was drank a toast to "The pious and brave Macdonough—the professor of the religion of the Redeemer—preparing for action he called on God, who forsook him not in the hour of danger." Lossing says of the battle, page 870, "For two hours and twenty minutes this severe naval battle raged, while the thunder of cannon, the hiss of rockets, the scream of bombs, and the rattle of musketry were heard on the shore. It was a sublime sight and was beheld by hundreds of spectators on the headlands of the Vermont shore, who greeted the victory with shouts." The battle on land was hotly contested on the banks of the Saranac, and the British regulars were slowly giving the Americans the worst of it, when Sir George Prevost, commander of the British army, who was a coward, ordered a retreat as soon as the naval fight was over, although he had overwhelming numbers.

Much fault was found with Governor Chittenden, who was violently opposed to the war, for not ordering the militia to the defense of Plattsburgh. Lossing says, page 874: "Governor Chittenden, of Vermont, had issued a patriotic address" (not an order) "at the beginning of the invasion, calling upon the militia of his state to hasten to the aid of their brethren across the lake. It had been heartily responded to, and at the close of the memorable day of the battle, not less than twenty-five hundred Green Mountain boys were on the Saranac under Major General Strong." Combining our family traditions with the foregoing, the Enosburgh company, Captain M. D. Follett, his brother and three sons were in this force.

Cooper, Vol. II, p. 516, says, "The battle of Plattsburgh Bay is justly placed among the very highest of its (the navy's) claims to glory. The consequences of this victory were immediate and important." He adds in regard to Prevost: "He made a precipitate and unmilitary retreat, abandoning much of his heavy artillery, stores and supplies, and

from that moment to the end of the war the northern frontier was cleared of the enemy." While the battle in itself is hardly worth mentioning as an event with which Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) had any important connection, our family traditions show that the period of excitement and anxiety brought about by the invasion, which came so near, and by the battle, the noise of which was heard on the Follett farm, stands out in great prominence in the history of the Follett family.

To illustrate the public sentiment in Vermont during the war of 1812, the following is extracted from Thompson's History: The legislature had "passed a law, prohibiting all intercourse between the people of Vermont and Canada, without a permit from the Governor, under a penalty of one thousand dollars fine and seven years confinement at hard labor in the state's prison. They also passed an act exempting the person and property of the militia while in actual service, from attachment," etc.

Whether Captain Follett remained in the militia after the war of 1812, the writer is not now informed. However, an extract from the Vermont Historical Magazine, concerning the militia men of Vermont, may not be out of place in this connection. At the close of a fine description of the annual training day as it occurred in the early years of Vermont, in which the ridiculous side of the inspection, the assortment of arms, uniforms, movements, etc., are shown to great length, we find the following: "The old militia officers, however ignorant they might have been of military tactics, were nevertheless, mostly men of great personal courage, as any one who crossed their track readily ascertained." "Rough and uncultivated as were the most of these brawny old militia men, yet for valor and true bravery, they have never been exceeded in the history of the world. A more splendid stock of fighting men, we very well know, never existed than has been furnished by our own gallant State."

LEGISLATOR AND JUDGE.

Family traditions tell us that Martin Dewey Follett was representative in the Vermont legislature for eight years, and was a judge of common pleas. To corroborate these statements the following letter was obtained:

STATE OF VERMONT,
OFFICE OF SECRETARY OF STATE,
MONTPELIER, *November 18, 1895.*

Major Harry P. Ward, Columbus, O.:

Dear Sir:—In reply to yours of November 16, I beg to say that I find that Martin D. Follett represented the town of Enosburgh in the legislature of Vermont in the years 1808, 1810, 1818, 1819, 1820, 1821, 1822 and 1823.

Very truly yours,
(Signed.) T. C. PHINNEY,
Deputy Secretary.

Corroboration of the tradition in regard to service as judge has been obtained through Mr. Benjamin D. Hopkins, of St. Albans, in an extract from a history of Berkshire, written about 1860 by Stephen Royce, for a long time chief justice of Vermont, and later, Governor of the State, who, Mr. Hopkins asserts, knew Captain Follett intimately. The entire extract is interesting and is as follows:

“Hon. Martin D. Follett lived just within the border of Enosburgh, but his business and neighborhood associations were almost wholly with the southeast part of Berkshire and the northwest part of Montgomery. More than sixty years ago he began the beautiful interval farm on Trout River, which, with additions, is owned by the wealthy Harding Allen” (now by Charles Allen). “A social, kind, pleasant and agreeable man, patient under privations, Mr. Follett was remarkably fitted to mitigate the hardships and smooth the asperities incident to the settlement of a new country. His uprightness and sound judgment brought him much into requisition as the pacificator of disputes and contentions, as also in the settlement of estates of deceased per-

sons, and generally where such qualities existing in an eminent degree are sought and appealed to. He was often town representative in the legislature, and his well appreciated worth finally advanced him to the dignity of a county court judge." The foregoing is found in the Vermont Historical Magazine, Volume II.

Mrs. Clark says her father was judge for a year or more in 1812, but that it did not take a great amount of his time, as the semi-annual terms of court lasted only about four weeks, during which he would have to be in St. Albans. Mrs. Clark adds that her father used to say he was not cut out for a judge, but as the people insisted upon his taking the position, he accepted it. She further states that he never asked for a vote or did any "stumping", as we now term it, during the political campaigns of his day. The legislature was poorly paid, members receiving only about enough to pay their board and horse feed during sessions. Nothing of particular interest has come to light in connection with Captain Follett's legislative career, his name being found on the usual committees, reports, petitions, etc.

One event, however, might be mentioned, as it made a lasting impression not only upon him, but upon his entire family. It is told by Mrs. Clark. A Captain Clapp, member of the same legislature, neighbor and warm personal friend, was afflicted with melancholia about a week before the close of the session, probably in the year 1820, and Captain Follett prevailed upon him to go home, agreeing to accompany him. At one place where they stopped for the night they slept in the same bed, and in the morning Captain Clapp said he wanted to sleep a little longer than usual. Captain Follett left him, but returned to the room in about half an hour, to find that he had cut his throat from ear to ear and was dead. Captain Follett was very much affected over the affair and was some time getting over it. No suspicion was ever attached to him.

APPEARANCE AND CHARACTERISTICS.

Mrs. Clark says that when La Fayette visited Vermont in 1825, her father was interested in the celebrations, but in just what capacities, she does not remember. Thompson says of this event: "On the 4th of July 1825 La Fayette entered Vermont for the first time at Windsor, where he was joyfully received by the governor, and a numerous body of citizens assembled to welcome the early benefactor of their country. From Windsor he proceeded by the way of Montpelier to Burlington, and was everywhere received with the warmest affection and gratitude, and with the most enthusiastic demonstration of admiration and applause."

There were no photograph galleries in early Vermont and portrait painters were evidently not common to those parts, as we have no likeness of Captain Follett. His children, Mrs. Clark and Mr. James Follett, modestly tell of him that people said he was a handsome man, and describe him as being about five feet, nine or ten inches in height, and of one hundred and sixty or more pounds in weight. His hair and eyes were black, and his complexion dark. His face, always clean shaven, was kindly. He was straight and trim and had the bearing of a military officer. While not much of a singer himself, although his children were all singers, he had a good voice and was quite social. Like every Vermont farmer, he kept a barrel of whisky, good whisky, which was religiously offered to visitors, male and female, but of which no one ever drank to the least excess. His politeness was a marked characteristic. The writer has seen a letter, written by him to his wife, while he was in the service in the War of 1812, which is a model of affection, true dignity and polish. He was so ready to sympathize with those in trouble, that many persons came to him with requests to become security for them. Complying with such requests, he had a large security debt to pay toward the close of his life. This, combined with an unfortunate investment in a large

drove of horses, which he was compelled to feed over winter, lost for him his fine farm and rendered him bankrupt. He then removed to St. Albans, in April 1830, and kept hotel, at which he was meeting with success when his death occurred. He died of inflammation of the lungs February 4, 1831, and his body was taken to East Berkshire for burial. About twenty years ago one of his grand-daughters was visiting in East Berkshire and noticed that his grave was unmarked. She communicated this discovery to several of his descendants and a suitable stone was promptly placed in position.

CHILDREN OF MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT.
(1765—1831.)

FIRST.—John Fassett Follett (1791—1863), son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831); born October 30, 1791, at Cambridge, Vt., married November 6, 1816, in a hotel kept by George Woodworth, at East Berkshire, Sarah Lemira Woodworth, who was born April 29, 1790. She died June 23, 1863, and he May 27, 1863, at Granville, Ohio. Sarah Lemira Woodworth's father was John Woodworth, who died 1825, aged sixty-nine. He was a farmer and toward the last of his life lost the use of his limbs and was an invalid. John Woodworth's children were John, George, Thompson, William, Frederick, Betsey and Sally (Sarah). These names of the children are furnished by Mrs. Clark from memory only, and she thinks are not all, nor in order of birth. John Woodworth's wife was Elizabeth Morey, who died 1824, aged sixty-nine and a half years. The Woodworths were of Scotch descent and lived and died near the Follett farm in the Trout River valley. Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, page 120, says: "John M. Woodworth, Esq., who settled on the original and main road about one and a half miles south of Berkshire Center, at an early day, and who became a magistrate and was a leading citizen, left four sons, two of them twins, named George Washington and Alexander Hamilton, who all settled in town and are among its intelligent, thrifty and prosperous farmers. They add much as well to the resources as to the solid and stable character of the limited community." John Fassett Follett (1791—1863) was a farmer and lived at

Enosburgh and Richford, Vt., until September, 1836, when he moved, by lake and canal, to Licking County, Ohio. He and his family lived in a cabin while they cleared a farm. In 1851 he moved to a farm near Granville, Ohio. As before mentioned, he served in the War of 1812. He was deacon and elder in the churches to which he belonged. An extract from a letter written in 1834 by Henry Hopkins, Jr., to his brother, Deacon Fay Hopkins, who had recently "gone west" to Oberlin, Ohio, may be interesting in this connection. "The scene is not much changed from what it was when you left. For instance, when I go to meeting I meet Neighbor M. and wife going to Montgomery. Going a little farther on you see John coming off the hill, on the old mare, with Harriet behind." Mr. B. D. Hopkins says: "This no doubt refers to John Follett and his daughter (now Mrs. Jewett). John had left the river some little time before and gone about a mile east, on the hill, to live in Richford, but of course his church and social relations were not changed." The children of John Fassett Follett (1791—1863) were as follows, all being born in Vermont:

Harriet (Mrs. Timothy Jewett, of Indianola, Iowa) born April 29, 1818.

Sophronia (Mrs. Franklin Foster Lewis, of Johnstown, Ohio), born July 13, 1819, died December 4, 1867.

Charles (Judge Follett, of Newark, Ohio), born December 14, 1820; was prosecuting attorney 1847, state senator 1853, Judge of Common Pleas 1869, Judge of Circuit Court 1884, holding that office ten years; was candidate for Congress 1864 and 1866, at which time he claimed he was fairly elected, but was "counted out".

Alfred (Dr. Follett, Sr., of Granville, Ohio), born September 1, 1822; on reaching the age of twenty-one his foot was crushed in a threshing machine, on his father's farm at Johnstown; one of the oldest and best-known physicians in Licking County.

Fidelia (Mrs. Timothy Rose, of Granville), born May 28, 1824.

Martin Dewey (Judge Follett, of Marietta, Ohio), born October 8, 1826; was valedictorian of his class in Marietta College; was candidate for Congress 1866 and 1868; was Judge of Supreme Court of Ohio 1883 to 1887; is now member of State Board of Charities, etc.

George (of New York City), born September 28, 1828; has built up, together with his brother Austin, a very extensive and successful wool business.

John Fassett (of Cincinnati), born February 18, 1831; graduated from Marietta College with highest grades then attained in the history of that institution; represented Licking County in legislature 1865 to 1869; Speaker 1867 and 1868; represented Hamilton County in Forty-eighth Congress, 1882 to 1884; candidate for Congress again and defeated on party lines.

Austin Willey (of New York City), born August 5, 1833; is associated with his brother George in wool business.

Second.—Martin Dewey Follett, Jr. (1793—1865), son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831); born July 18, 1793, at Cambridge, Vt., married February 12, 1816, at Pomphret, Vt., Lurania Winchell, who was born May 9, 1797, at Granville, Mass. He was a farmer and died September 18, 1865, at Royalton, Vt., and she died August 19, 1869, at Sharon, Vt.

Their children were:

Sally Persis, born February 20, 1817.

Truman, March 6, 1820, died 1823.

Lucy F. (Mrs. Goff), February 23, 1823, died 1877.

Ammi, February 12, 1825. A dairy farmer in White River Valley, Vt. Represented Sharon, Vt., in legislature, 1880 and 1881. Has been town agent, selectman, lister, justice of the peace, etc. Is deacon and chorister of Congregational church.

Norman, June 6, 1827; moved to Missouri. Died in Cameron, Mo., April 18, 1890.

CHILDREN OF CAPT. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT.

Calista Ann (Mrs. Miller), February 17, 1829.

All born at Enosburgh and seem to have remained in Vermont.

Third.—Harry Follett, son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born March 8, 1795, at Cambridge, Vt., married 1819, at Berkshire, Vt., to Clarissa Pond, who was born September 7, 1798, at Hyde Park, Vt. He died January 17, 1875, at Richford, Wis.

Their children were:

Cassius Fay, born March 10, 1821, died 1843.

Henry Fitch, February 24, 1824.

Elias, February 11, 1826.

Matilda Clarissa, May 6, 1832.

Sanford, June 6, 1834.

Luther Martin, August 10, 1840.

Vermont Historical Gazetteer, Vol. II, p. 118, says: "Henry Follett's father-in-law, Mr. Ezekiel Pond, was a quiet, industrious, and sensible man, and became remarkable for his longevity, being ninety-five years old at the time of his death. His posterity fitly represent the Revolutionary patriarch who is gone. Of ample means," etc.

A Washishara county (Wisconsin) paper, in an obituary of Harry Follett, says: "Thus passed away, full of years and usefulness, one of the pioneers of Washishara county. He was a soldier in the War of 1812, and in 1843 he represented his town in the legislature of his native state, and held several other offices of trust and responsibility during his residence in the state. He came to Wisconsin in September 1855, and settled on the farm which was his home until the time of his decease. He held the office of Justice of the Peace for a number of years, discharging the duties pertaining to it with ability and integrity," etc.

Fourth.—Elizabeth (Betsey) Follett (1797—1884), daughter of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—

1831); born November 30, 1797, at Cambridge, Vt., was married to Thompson Woodworth, brother to Sarah Lemira Woodworth, wife of John Fassett Follett (1791—1863), at Enosburgh, Vt., and died September 27, 1884, at Granville, O. Thompson Woodworth died 1847, at Johnstown, O., aged forty-seven years. Their children were:

Eliza (Mrs. Fleek, of Newark, O.), May 31, 1820 (died March 31, 1891, at Granville, O.).

Rosetta, 1822 (died 1885 at Granville).

Persis, 1824 (died July 10, 1888, at Granville).

Truman Thompson (of Carey, O.).

Betsey came to Ohio in the thirties, coming from Saratoga, N. Y., where she had lived for a few years.

Fifth.—Sally Follett (1799—1804) daughter of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831).

Sixth.—Hannah Follett (1803—living), daughter of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born October 31, 1803, at Enosburgh, Vt. Came to Licking County, Ohio, with her brother Eliphalet and her mother, and kept house for them until his marriage. Lived with them a number of years afterward until her marriage, November 9, 1848, to Strong Clark, a widower with three children. He was born in Massachusetts August 26, 1792, came to Licking County when fifteen years of age and died March 23, 1874. She possessed an exceptionally fine voice, which retained its compass and purity of tone until her eighty-third year. She is now ninety-two years of age, and lives quietly on a farm at Hartford, Licking County, Ohio, where she is tenderly cared for at the home of her step-son, Orris Clark.

As she is a living daughter of a revolutionary soldier, Mrs. Hannah Follett Clark was recently made a member of the Daughters of the American Revolution, by the chapter at Dayton, Ohio.

Seventh.—Eliphalet Follett (1805—1887), son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born December 4, 1805, at Enosburgh, married at Johnstown, Ohio, August 9, 1837, to Katharine Ellen Van Sickle, who was born July 4, 1812, near Meadville, Pa., and who died at Cleveland, Ohio, October 10, 1889. She was the youngest child of Garrett and Betsey Van Sickle. Her father was an old Indian fighter and was at one time sheriff of Crawford County, Pa. On one occasion he took his family to a fort where Pittsburg now is for safety. He went back with some of the neighbors to secure their live stock, and the party was attacked by Indians and defeated. He succeeded in hiding himself in a hollow log in the woods, where he remained three days without subsistence save some moccasin strings which he had in his pockets. He and his family had many exciting experiences with the Indians, and the children were very much afraid of them. Once, when the mother was baking bread before the old-fashioned fire place, several Indians walked into the house and asked her to give them some of the bread. She refused and they spat upon it, making it unfit for use, but they did not get any bread, even after that.

Eliphalet Follett (1805—1887) died April 23, 1887,, at Cleveland, Ohio, and was buried at Granville, Ohio, as was also his wife.

Mrs. Gates, of Montgomery, Franklin County, Vt., furnishes a list of the teachers who taught in the log school-house on the Trout river, and says: "Eliphalet Follett taught several winters."

After his father's death in 1831 he came to Ohio. Stopped first at Gambier, where he spent a little time as a student. Came on to Granville, where he began dairy farming. Returned to Vermont, and brought back his mother and sister Hannah. He sometimes took his cheese as far as New Orleans for a market, going by flat-boat to Cincinnati. On one occasion he took a cheese which weighed a thousand pounds and thereby received no little notoriety. His return

from the South was always anxiously awaited, as he would bring back oranges and other things which could not at that time be had in Licking County. He lived also at Johnstown and Alexandria, near Granville, a number of years. Moved to Oberlin to educate his children. Then lived in Colorado two years, then in Kansas several years, returning to Granville to spend his old age. A man of much force. His children were:

Dwight, born June 12, 1838 (died 1862, a soldier in the 22nd O. V. I., in army hospital at St. Louis).

Lewis, June 20, 1840 (was adjutant 76th O. V. I.). General Willard Warner wrote of him: "A better soldier or braver officer than Lewis Follett never held a commission in the army."

Howard, April 25, 1843 (a soldier in 185th O. V. I. in 1864-5).

Ruth, died 1846.

Henrietta Jeanette (wife of Judge Carlos M. Stone, of Cleveland), March 9, 1849.

Frank and Fannie (Mrs. Salade, of Kansas), twins, June 15, 1852.

William, February 20, 1858, died 1895.

Eighth.—Charles Follett, son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born February 4, 1808, died March 28, 1808, at Enosburgh.

Ninth.—Persis Follett (1809—1893), daughter of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born April 5, 1809, at Enosburgh, and married April 5, 1831, to John Parker, who lived on the Comings farm, which adjoined the Follett farm. John Parker (1807—1891) was the son of John Parker (1782—1808) [married Betsey Jewett], who was the son of Joseph Parker (1757—1827) [married Hannah Risley], a soldier in the "Lexington Alarm," and, according to records of U. S. Pension Office, a private in General Israel Putnam's Third Connecticut regiment, Continental Line. From the records in "Connecticut in the Revo-

lution" of enlistments from Coventry, it appears that Joseph Parker, mentioned as "Jr." (1757—1827), must have been a son of Joseph Parker (dates unknown), also a soldier in the "Lexington Alarm." Betsey Jewett (1784—1864) was the daughter of Elam Jewett (married Richardson), a soldier of the Revolution (see Revolutionary War Archives of Massachusetts), who was descended through Eleazer. Eleazer, Jeremiah (came to America an infant in 1638), and Joseph, from Edward Jewett (born about 1575—d. 1616), a cloth manufacturer of Bradford, England, to whom most of the Jewetts in this country trace their origin.

Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 110, says of the Jewett family: "Mr. Elam Jewett, an elderly man from Weybridge, or New Haven, in Addison county, was one of the first who came into town" (Berkshire) "with means and strength to make himself and family at once felt as important accessions to the infant settlement. He arrived about 1795, accompanied by two sons and was followed soon after by two others. They were all industrious and sensible men of unquestioned integrity. The oldest, Elam Jewett, Jr., was an active and efficient man in conducting the business of the town—filling, in succession, most of the town offices, discharging that of magistrate, and occasionally serving as representative in the state legislature. Capt. Jared Jewett was eminently an upright, humane and firm man, but more domestic and less aspiring, as were also the two other sons first mentioned." These were the father and the brothers of Betsey Jewett.

After the death of John Parker (1782—1808) Betsey Jewett Parker was married to Andrew Comings (1785—1854). See notice under head of James Follett (1811).

John Parker (1807—1891) and his wife, Persis Follett Parker (1809—1893) removed to Granville, Ohio, by horse railroad, lake and canal-boat in 1835. Their golden wedding was celebrated April 5, 1881,

JAMES.

at which every living child and grandchild and many relatives were present. Their children were:

Jane Elizabeth (Mrs. Hudson C. Ward, of Columbus, O.), born February 12, 1833, at East Berkshire, Vt.

Henry Martin, born December 11, 1835, at Granville, O. A graduate of Marietta college. Was for some years superintendent of public instruction at Mansfield, O., and has held the same position at Elyria, O., for nearly twenty-five years.

Elam Dewey, born Sept. 20, 1839, at Granville, O. Served in 87th O. V. I., 1862. A graduate of Marietta college. Is now general agent of "Soo Line" at St. Paul, Minn.

Charles Delavan, born August 19, 1844, at Granville, O., died September 29, 1894, at St. Paul, Minn., and buried with full military honors October 4, 1894, at Granville, O. Served in 113th O. V. I., 1862 to 1865, and was Commander Department of Minnesota, G. A. R., 1891 to 1892. Was General Agent Traders' Despatch at St. Paul, Minn.

Harriet Winslow, born August 30, 1846, and died September 28, 1850, at Granville, O.

Mary Elsinga (Mrs. Alfred J. Bell, of Wichita, Kan.), born September 28, 1850, at Granville, O.

Tenth.—James Follett (1811—living), son of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), born February 24, 1811, at Enosburgh, and married October 5, 1837, at East Berkshire, to Jane Comings (John Parker's half sister), who was born March 2, 1816, at East Berkshire, and died February 26, 1864, at Hartford, O. It was his intention early in life to become a minister, but poor health interfered. Came to Licking County, O., very early, and returned to Vermont to marry. Cleared his farm near Granville. Later he bought a farm near Hartford. Is now living at Hartford, nearly eighty-five years of age, his daughter, Mrs. Lincoln, furnishing him a pleasant home for his old age. His children (all born in Licking County, Ohio), were:

CHILDREN OF CAPT. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT.

James William, January 1, 1839, died March 2, 1840.

Ellen Betsey (Mrs. Wells), September 12, 1840.

Hannah Persis, July 10, 1842, died July 7, 1869.

Sarah Janette (Mrs. Lincoln), April 15, 1845.

Mary Janette, January 1, 1848, died in school at Oberlin, O., August 19, 1867.

Martha, August 4, 1849, died next day.

Fannie, June 12, 1854, died same day.

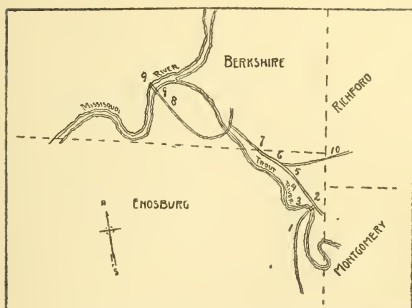
Fay Comings, October 8, 1856; is a commercial traveller of high standing at Hastings, Neb.

James Follett's father-in-law, Andrew Comings, was an orderly sergeant in the war of 1812, subsequently captain, and was the son of Benjamin Comings, a Revolutionary soldier, who fought at Bennington. The Comings and Jewett descendants have married into the Follett and Dewey families a number of times.

Vermont Historical Gazetteer, Vol. II, p. 118, says: "Andrew Comings was a man of much energy in business, and after clearing up one farm established himself in a more eligible location upon Trout river. He became a magistrate, took a lively interest in the civil and religious affairs of his town and neighborhood, and was a leading citizen. He left four highly respected and prosperous sons, a worthy clergyman being of the number. Only one of them remains in town, living on the paternal homestead, which lies both in Berkshire and Enosburgh." The one who remained is Mr. William A. Comings, still living on the old Comings place.

The Ohio Society, Sons of the American Revolution, recently presented Mr. James Follett (1811) with a life membership in that society, as he is one of the very few living sons of the revolutionary soldiers.

TROUT RIVER VALLEY.



TROUT RIVER VALLEY, ABOUT 1820.

Mr. B. D. Hopkins furnishes a tracing from a county map "to show what a goodly company once lived in and monopolized the beautiful Trout River valley." The locations, as they were seventy or eighty years ago, are indicated by numbers as follows:

1. Hopkins Place.
2. Log School house.
3. Martin Dewey Follett, Jr. (1793—1864).
4. Captain Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831).
5. John Follett (1791—1863).
6. Benjamin Follett (1774—1831).
7. Betsey Jewett Comings.
8. East Berkshire "Meeting-house."
9. East Berkshire Village.
10. James Follett (1776—1832).

The Hopkins place is now occupied by Silas Hopkins, the log school-house has been removed, a modern dwelling has been erected by the Allens on

the site of the old brick house of Captain Follett, and the old-fashioned houses of John Follett and his brother, Martin Dewey Follett, Jr., are still standing, that of John being the one he occupied previous to his removal to Richford. In the early days there were in that corner of Enosburgh, on the road from Berkshire to Montgomery, none but Folletts.

East Berkshire village lies on both sides of the Missisquoi river.

The "Follett School House," District No. 5, Enosburgh, Vt., was built on the east bank of the Trout River, at the Hopkins bridge, previous to 1815 and torn away 1847. In it many of the persons mentioned in this volume received their "schooling," and several of them taught school in it. "Third meeting at early candle light" was often held there.

FREDERICK FOLLETT.
(1761—1804.)

FREDERICK FOLLETT, son of Lieutenant Benjamin Follett, Jr. (1715— —), and half brother to Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778), born March 10, 1761, place not known, but was probably Windham, Conn.

The writer has been unable to find anything concerning Esther Robinson, Lieutenant Benjamin Follett's second wife, who was Frederick Follett's mother. It has been suggested that she was a granddaughter of Elisabeth Pabodie, the daughter of John Alden, of the Mayflower, as Elisabeth Pabodie had a daughter who married a Robinson who settled in Windham.

It is probable that Frederick, then an infant, accompanied his father to the Wyoming valley in 1763, and was one of the unfortunate party who were compelled to travel on foot from the valley to Connecticut after the massacre of October 15, 1763. He undoubtedly returned to the Wyoming valley with his father in 1769. That he was shot, stabbed, scalped and almost killed during the revolutionary war there is not the least doubt. There are several accounts of the affair in our family traditions, and several references to it in various histories, some of which will be mentioned in full.

Mr. Joseph E. Follett, of Milwaukee, a grandson of Frederick Follett (1761—1804), writes under date October 25, 1895: "My father's relation of the scalping was to this effect: His father was an expert in all athletic games of that day, the only rival being a son of one of the Indian chiefs, then, of course, on very friendly terms. On the day of the massacre (as

I have always understood my father, for the exact date was not called in question) Frederick Follett, then about nineteen years of age, and not liable to be called upon, went out on a foraging expedition near the stockade (that is, volunteered to go) and then it was that they were attacked by the Indians, among whom was this young Indian, son of the chief. He was stabbed and scalped by the young Indian and left for dead on the field. Later he was brought into the stockade, revived and survived."

Mr. Joseph E. Follett again writes: "The one scalped was at the time (1779) only nineteen years of age. I never heard his son (Oran, 1798—1894) speak of his father (Frederick) being in any regular employment, and think that he was never in the regular service. As I have been told, at the time of the scalping the family was living in the stockade, or probably in the fort."

The records of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett, of Marietta, O., contain the following:

"This Frederick Follett, during the massacre at Wyoming valley July, 1778, was shot, stabbed nine times and scalped, but was cared for and got well. Marvin Follett says this Frederick Follett used to swear and shoot all the Indians he could" (possibly this tradition ought to be so changed as to read, "used to swear that he would shoot all the Indians he could," which would be far more likely to be true), "and said when they had shot him and he lay on the ground they set a young Indian to scalp him, and he cut all around and made a bad job of it, that he would not have cared so much if he had made a good job."

Hon. Martin D. Follett adds in his monograph copy, 1892: "Oran Follett told me in 1891 that in July, 1778, during the Wyoming Valley hostilities, some of the revolutionists were gathered into a fort for protection. As food became scarce they had to procure it from neighboring farms; that they drew lots for men to go out and secure food. On the day Frederick Follett was scalped three men were se-

WOUNDED AND SCALPED AT WYOMING.

lected to go, but one of them having sixteen new silver dollars, showed the money and offered all of it to anyone who would take his place. Frederick Follett, then seventeen years of age, and full of courage, accepted the offer and went with two men to procure wheat. He watched for enemies whilst the two men threshed the wheat in a barn that was near some woods. At length he saw Indians emerge from the woods through a brush fence toward the barn. He gave the alarm, and then ran with all his might, keeping the barn between himself and the Indians so far as he could. Soon an old Indian with a gun, and a young Indian about his own age, pursued him alone. Where the ground was grassy or hard he gained on the Indians, but when he came to ploughed or soft ground the Indians gained on him. When near enough the old Indian shot and wounded him, and prevented his running further. He then fell as dead, believing this to be his only hope. The young Indian only came up and stabbed him nine times, and scalped him, but he did not use a tomahawk, as the old Indian probably would have done. This was seen from the fort and as men hastened to his rescue the Indians fled. He was carried to the fort and laid down without much medical care as he was expected to die in a short time. As he was living the next morning, the doctor gave him attention, and the women, who were fond of the active and brave boy, nursed him to recovery. Frederick said he saw the scalper's face while he cut and tore him, and if he ever saw it again there would be one less live Indian."

But tradition and history seem always to differ in some respects. Miner, who is probably considered the best historian of the Wyoming Valley, in reference to the troubles in March, 1779 (not July, 1778), mentions this incident, page 263: "The savages, it was supposed, had retired with their booty, but although the utmost caution was exercised, no vigilance could effectually guard every part from danger. A band of twenty Indians suddenly re-

turned, and on the Kingston side of the river, in sight from the Wilkes-Barre fort, in broad day light, murdered three valuable citizens, Mr. Elihu Williams, Lieutenant Buck and Mr. Stephen Pettebone. Frederick Follet, who was with them, fell, pierced by seven wounds from a spear, and with the others, was scalped and left for dead. Instantly a detachment of men was sent over; the Indians had fled. Follet, weltering in blood, gave signs of life, and was taken to the fort. Dr. William Hooker Smith, on examining his wounds, said, that while everything should be done that kindness and skill could suggest, he regarded his recovery as hopeless. Yet he did recover. One spear thrust had penetrated his stomach so that its contents came out at his side. Mr. Follet lived many years and removed to Ohio, where he left a large family. Dr. Smith gained great credit for restoring Follet to health and usefulness."

Peck, page 407, in an account of the events of February and March, 1779 (not July, 1778), says: "Buck, Williams and Pettebone were killed and Follett scalped on Kingston Flats."

Wright's Historical Sketches of Plymouth, Pa., page 206, contains the same account. Another historian (the reference being accidentally lost), mentions among the events of the troublesome times after the massacre (there were no whites in the valley for some months after), men being murdered and a man being brought in, scalped almost to his eyes. No names were given in this connection, but the writer has supposed Frederick Follett was referred to.

Peck, page 213, gives a statement of a Mrs. Bedford, grand-daughter of Dr. Smith, among other statements regarding the troublesome times when settlers were coming back the spring after the massacre. "Frederick Follett, at the time of the battle" (she possibly referred to the collision between the Indians and the whites at the time Frederick was scalped in 1779) "was stabbed nine times,

and scalped, and finally recovered. Several years afterward he called upon Dr. Smith to assist him in securing him a pension. They made an appointment to meet at my father's house. The doctor examined his scars. He showed us where he was stabbed, and it was evident enough that he had been scalped. As to his being stabbed, he said it was done by different Indians, each one giving him a stab in passing. He endured the scalping and stabbing without making a motion, that they might suppose him dead. When he was scalped he supposed the next thing would be the tomahawk, but the attention of the Indian who did the deed being probably drawn in some other direction, he neglected this part of the operation. Those following on, supposing the work completed, contented themselves with piercing what they thought a dead man with their spears." This story, being told by a person not directly interested, founded on what she heard and saw years after, would naturally contain errors.

Mr. Benjamin F. Follett, of Leadville, Colo., is in possession of a manuscript account of the scalping prepared by his father, Frederick Follett (1804—1891), a son of the Frederick who was scalped. Of this manuscript, which consisted originally of five pages, the first page has been lost. The missing page in all probability contained an account of the early life of Frederick, and perhaps some data concerning his father. What remains is here given in full:

"of seventeen years he found himself in the ranks with his country men, contending against the oppressive acts and open warfare of the mother country, and its hirelings of the Colonies, the merciless savage. On a certain occasion (the date of which has escaped me, and the record of which, with all my books and papers, were destroyed by the great fire in Troy), he was under the command of Gen. Swift, on the Susquehanna river. Himself and some others of the command were detailed to thresh some wheat in a barn not far from the fort. The non-appearance

of the savages for some days had probably produced an apathetic feeling on the part of the garrison, that led to a disregard of those precautions so necessary to safety against the wiles of the Indian. But this feeling proved a fatal one to the unfortunate men detailed for special duty on that occasion. The large doors on either side of the barn were thrown open, and the men were diligently performing their allotted work, wholly unconscious of the deadly peril in store for them, when all of a sudden the death yell of the savage broke the harmony of the scene, and both doors were blockaded by the dusky foe! Taken so completely by surprise, resistance was out of the question, and those who were not instantly struck down, confined their efforts to an attempt to break through the barrier that opposed them. My father was lithe and active, and was the only one that succeeded in breaking through the cordon that surrounded them alive! He laid his course directly for the Fort, but had scarcely got under way when he felt a stinging sensation, a sharp pain in the right shoulder. Nothing daunted, he held on his course, and a moment later a like compliment was paid to his left shoulder! Still he did not relax his efforts, but directed them persistently to the means of escape. With the two bullets in his body the chances to that end were materially lessened, as the yells and whoops of the savages indicated the distance between them very sensibly lessened! A new method of attack soon developed itself! The savages had approached sufficiently near to use their spears upon him, and they pierced his back nine times before he fell!! Some of the incisions had penetrated to the lungs, and through which the breath escaped in his respirations! His consciousness, however, did not forsake him! In falling he fell with his face to the earth, and without any very great effort in that direction, pretended to be dead!! Indications now reached his ears that the Fort was alarmed, and that assistance was on the way to his relief! But would it reach him in time to save his life? The probabilities were

against it, but hope did not utterly forsake him! The firing from the coming relief became every moment more rapid and distinct, and he redoubled his efforts to deceive his dusky friends in the tragedy that imposed upon him the role of 'playing dead'! But these reflections were the work of but a moment. In the meantime the Indians were not idle. They supposed him dead, but the coveted "top-knot" was not to be abandoned, so one of the young warriors whipt out his knife, and circling the crown of the head, penetrating to the skull, seized the hair in his hand, and with one effort, literally tore it from the skull!! Holding it up, reeking with gore, he felt for his Tomahawk, to give the finishing blow, and render assurance doubly sure, but he was too late! By this time relief was so near at hand that the savages were compelled to seek safety in flight!!

My father always insisted—although he by no means took the ground that the shooting and stabbing was to be counted as a pleasurable amusement—that all else combined was a mere pastime compared to that one act of tearing the scalp from his head!! It seemed the very achme, the essence of all other torture combined!! It was with the greatest difficulty that he pressed back the rising agony of his soul at that moment! But with a mighty effort he succeeded, and his friends soon surrounded him. They considered him past all hope of recovery, but as life was not wholly extinct, humanity at least prompted them to try the needful remedies. He was carried to the Fort, and the Surgeon, Dr. Smith, made a careful examination of his case. He thought it beyond his skill, but as long as there was life there was a small chance for hope, and the subject was a good one to practice on, and he would experiment upon it. He did so, and with success, for my father was restored to health, notwithstanding the fearful ordeal through which he had passed.

He afterwards entered the Naval service of his country. Was captured by the British, and confined six months in prison at Halifax. Exchanged, and

again entered the service, and again captured and taken to England, returning to his native country on the cessation of hostilities. Thus ended his career in behalf of his country—short, sharp and by no means desirable.”

Mrs. Sarah Platt, of Columbus, O., a granddaughter of Frederick Follett (1761—1804), states that she heard the story of the scalping when young and that it was always her understanding that it took place several days before the massacre of July 3, 1778. She states also that her grandfather was compelled to wear a piece of cotton over a certain spot on his head, where he had been cut to the bone.

Mrs. Hannah Clark (1803) remembers being told of this terrible adventure of her grandfather's brother Frederick, and says that she was told that it occurred some time after the great massacre, but just how many months after she cannot say.

The writer has entertained an opinion that Frederick Follett was a member of the company of Continentals on duty in the Wilkes-Barre fort in the spring of 1779, when the settlers were slowly returning, taking care, however, to remain within the fort for some time. To substantiate this opinion, the name of Frederick Follett appears as a private on a roll of Captain Robert Durkee's company, one of the two Wyoming companies of the Continental Establishment, the age being given at 30 and the height 5 feet 11 inches. See "Connecticut in the Revolution," page 263, where a brief history of the very hard service of these companies with Washington, etc., is given. The age "30" must be one of those errors that are so very frequently met with in the poorly kept records of the troops of that day. Quite a number of the ages mentioned are "16," and a number 17 and 18, so that we see there were a number of mere boys in these companies, as there were in nearly all the companies of the revolutionary army. The same volume, page 265, gives the roll of Captain Spaulding's Independent company, as it stood June 23, 1778, being a consolidation of the two former com-

panies, many of whose members had been killed in battle in Washington's army. The name Frederick Follet appears (age and height not given) with residence Westmoreland (the whole Wyoming Valley was called Westmoreland), date of enlistment January 1, 1777, and under remarks: "In service January 1, 1780." The same name appears in the roll of Captain Simon Spaulding's company, in Pennsylvania Archives (2d series, 1880) Volume XI, p. 117, as follows: "Follet, Frederick, wounded and scalped." We see in the histories that this company was not in the battle of July 3, 1778, although a very few members had gone ahead, the company being then on its way to the assistance of Forty Fort, and some reached the scene of battle in time to meet their deaths. Had Frederick Follett been in the battle or massacre of July 3d, 1778, his name would appear on the monument, among those of the survivors. Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution says that Spaulding's company, on the way to and near Wyoming at the time of the massacre, promptly and wisely turned and retreated to a place of safety when they heard of the disaster. It was in the valley in the fall of 1778 burying the dead, etc., and was on duty in the Wilkes-Barre fort in the spring of 1779. Asahel Buck was lieutenant of this company, according to roll of June 23, 1778, and there is a remark after his name to the effect that he was "killed by Indians 1779." We have seen that Miner mentions Lieutenant Buck as one of the three who were killed when Frederick Follett was scalped in the spring of 1779. One point to be considered in connection with the traditions which give the time of the scalping as July 3, 1778, is that at that date there was no such confinement to the fort and no scarcity of provisions, as some of the settlers were living on their farms as the troops went to battle, and after the battle the people evidently went in and out of Forty Fort as they pleased until they were compelled to leave the valley by reason of their homes and provisions being burned and their stock driven away. In the spring of

1779 it was dangerous to leave the fort at all and provisions were very low, as will be noticed in the various histories.

For some time the writer entertained hopes of securing from the Pension Department copies of the original affidavits of Frederick Follett in regard to his experiences, but the reply which finally came was as follows, which is self-explanatory:

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR,
BUREAU OF PENSIONS,
WASHINGTON, D. C., *December 21, 1895.*

Sir:—Replying to your communication requesting information concerning Frederick and Eliphalet Follett, soldiers of the revolutionary war, I have to advise you as follows:

Frederick Follett was granted an invalid pension by special act of Congress, approved April 20, 1796, but this Bureau cannot furnish you the particulars of his military services for the reason that all the original papers in claims allowed under the old "Invalid Acts," if not on file in the Clerk's office, House of Representatives, were destroyed by the burning of the War Department buildings in the years 1800 and 1814.

The Bureau has no record of any pension having been applied for by the heirs of Eliphalet Follett, and cannot, therefore, supply you with any information concerning his services in the revolutionary war. Very respectfully,

WM. LOCHREN,
Commissioner.

Major Harry P. Ward, Columbus, O.

THE CHILDREN OF FREDERICK FOLLETT.
(1761—1804.)

THE following has been copied from the family bible of Oran Follett (1798—1894).

“Frederick Follett (Conn.), March 10, 1761, died May, 1804.

Giffe Babcock (Mass.), November 4, 1771, died July 13, 1845.

Benjamin Follett, born November 22, 1790, died October, 1823, at Trinidad, Cuba.

Nathan Follett, born July 9, 1793, died October 14, 1875.

George Follett, born August 16, 1795, died at the age of 14.

Susan Ann Follett, born August 5, 1797, died at her birth.

Oran Follett, born September 4, 1798, died October 14, 1894.

Foster Morse Follett, born February 1, 1801, died October 11, 1862.

John Follett, born February 3, 1803, died ——.

Frederick Follett, born November 1, 1804, died January 18, 1890.”

Other records show that the widow of Frederick Follett (1761—1804) married Dr. Calvin Bacon, and had two daughters, who died in infancy. She also married John Le Munyon. Without issue. Dates of marriage not known.

The records of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett, of Marietta, O., show that Benjamin Follett was a Passed Midshipman, U. S. Navy, not married, that Nathan (1793—1875) died at Ypsilanti, Mich.: that Oran (1798—1894) and Foster M. (1801—1862) both

CHILDREN OF FREDERICK FOLLETT (1761-1804).

died at Sandusky, O.; that John (1803—1836) died October 1836, in Niagara Co., N. Y., and that Frederick (1804—1890) died in New York City.

There are at hand records of five of the children of Frederick Follett (1761—1804) as follows:

Benjamin Follett (1790—1823), son of Frederick Follett (1761—1804). In the Register of the United States Navy, 1822, p. 14, the name is found as Passed Midshipman, date of warrant 6 December, 1814, born in New York, on West India station, and passed for promotion. It is said that he was a midshipman on the "Chesapeake" and was carried to Quebec a prisoner and there confined in the same cell in which his father had been confined. Such being the case, he was undoubtedly a cadet midshipman at the time of the horribly bloody conflict between the "Chesapeake" and the "Shannon," on the former of which all the officers were either killed or wounded, the ship being at last handled by those of the midshipmen who had not been killed.

The writer has copied the following letter from the original, now a most interesting relic, in the keeping of Mrs. Katharine Follett Ball, of Cleveland, O.:

U. S. BRIG "SPARK,"
TRINIDAD, Oct. 11th, 1823.

Orran Follett, Esq.:

Sir:—The melancholy office devolves upon a stranger, to inform you, of a late dispensation of Providence, which has deprived you of a brother, and our country of one of her most promising sons, Mr. Benjamin Follett, acting sailing master of the U. S. Brig Spark, died on the 2nd inst. on shore, at Trinidad de Cuba.

He was taken with a very severe attack of the yellow fever, while the vessel was in Havana, this fever, after some days left him, but in a very debilitated state. At one time I entertained some slight hopes of his recovery, but these were destroyed by the supervention of Typhus fever, which terminated his existence.—At his own earnest request he

BENJAMIN. NATHAN. ORAN.

was removed to the town of Trinidad, which he appeared to think would be alone, sufficient to cure him, but all efforts were of no avail. For the twelve hours immediately preceding his death, he was not perfectly rational, but some days, before this, when discharging black vomit, he was perfectly sensible of his situation and looked upon death with a calmness by no means common, the only regret expressed by him, was, that he had not seen the face of a relative for 10 years. It was at this period he requested me to write to you. His papers and other articles shall be taken care of until we arrive in some Port in the U. States, of which I shall give you notice. Be assured, Sir, of the sincere condolence of his brother officers, whose kindest attentions were called forth by his private as well as public merit.

Yr. Obt. St.,

JOHN HASLETT, M. D.,
U. S. Brig "Spark."

Orran Follett, Esq.,

Batavia, Genessee County,

New York.

Brig "Transit."

Nathan Follett (1793—1875), son of Frederick Follett (1761—1804), had born to him (according to the records of Mr. Joseph E. Follett, of Milwaukee):

Benjamin, died at Ypsilanti, Mich., soon after his father.

Nancy (Mrs. James Seaver).

Mary, dead.

Eliza, dead.

Oran Follett (1798—1894), son of Frederick Follett (1761—1804) was born in Gorham, Ontario Co., N. Y., September 4, 1798, and died at Sandusky, O., October 14, 1894. On February 4, 1821, he married, at Rochester, N. Y., Nancy Filer, who was born at Rome, Oneida Co., N. Y., June 3, 1801, and died at Buffalo, N. Y., March 16, 1830, buried at Forest Lawn, Buffalo. The children by this marriage were:

CHILDREN OF FREDERICK FOLLETT (1761-1804).

Joseph Ellicott, born at Batavia, N. Y., November 28, 1821, married Jane Drake August 14, 1845, died December 15, 1895. No children. See later notice.

Sarah Louisa, born at Batavia, N. Y., January 24, 1824, married to John M. Boalt December 29, 1842, had one son, who died in infancy. Died at Sandusky, O., October 23, 1844.

Puella Hanford, born at Buffalo, N. Y., October 30, 1826, married to Waldo F. Converse September 21, 1847, had daughter and son, died in infancy. Died at Sandusky, O., September 1, 1849.

Nancy Filer, born at Buffalo, N. Y., February 7, 1829, married to George Thornton January 19, 1853, had one son who died in fifth year, and one daughter, Mary, who died in 22nd year. Now living in Cincinnati.

Second marriage. Oran Follett (1798—1894) married for second wife, on November 22, 1832, Eliza Gill Ward, daughter of Mrs. Martha Bemis Ward, who was a daughter of Colonel Bemis, of revolutionary memory, of Brookfield, Mass., and sister of James D. Bemis, of Canandaigua, Ontario Co., N. Y. Mrs. Martha Ward died at the residence of Oran Follett in Sandusky, O., June 21, 1871, in her ninety-fifth year. Eliza Gill Ward, wife of Oran Follett, was born at Albany, N. Y., September 17, 1801, and died at Sandusky, O., April 29, 1876.

Mrs. Flamen W. Ball, of Cleveland, O., writes of Mrs. Martha Bemis Ward, "She was always very reticent in regard to her husband, but we know he perished in the war of 1812."

The children of Oran Follett (1798—1894) and Eliza Ward Follett (1801—1876) were:

Eliza Ward, born at Sandusky, O., July 18, 1835, married to Frank E. Foster March 21, 1854, had two sons, Oran Follett and Frank Newell, and one daughter, Jessie.

Katharine, born at Sandusky, O., September 25, 1840, married to Flamen Ball September 14, 1864, had five daughters and one son. Flamen Ball en-

OBITUARY NOTICE OF ORAN.

tered the army in 1861 and was mustered out in July 1865. He served part of the time as Captain, Second Kentucky, as Ohio helped to fill Kentucky's quota. Was additional Aide-de-Camp on the staffs of Generals McDowell, Cox and Thomas.

In regard to Oran Follett (1798—1894), the following is taken from an extensive notice which appeared in the Sandusky, O., Register, Wednesday, October 17, 1894:

"Oran Follett, for over half a century a resident of this city, died at 4 o'clock on Sunday afternoon, after a long, but not severely trying illness. * * * Mr. Follett was born September 4, 1798, in the town of Gorham, Ontario County, N. Y., the fifth of eight children, and was early apprenticed to James D. Bemis, a printer and book and newspaper publisher, living in Canandaigua. One of the incidents of this period was a runaway and enlistment in the navy, serving in the American fleet on Lake Ontario until the close of the war, when, being honorably discharged, he returned to his printing engagement.

About the year 1819 he was sent by Mr. Bemis to Rochester, N. Y., to take charge of a branch of his printing business. Early in 1821 he married Nancy Filer and settled in Batavia, N. Y. * * * At Batavia he commenced the publication of the first newspaper published within the state, west of Rochester, and named it the Spirit of the Times. The paper continues to be published to the present time without change of name. In 1823 Mr. Follett was elected to represent his election district in the Legislature of the state. At that time negotiations for the Presidency of the United States were made by the legislatures of the respective states, and in the session of 1824 Mr. Follett nominated John Quincy Adams, who was subsequently elected to that high office by the Congressional House of Representatives. (See same account of this in Thurlow Weed's autobiography.)

In 1825 Mr. Follett removed to Buffalo, N. Y., and engaged (Day, Follett & Haskins) in the publish-

ing of the Buffalo Journal and the selling of books, he being the editor of the paper and the active business man. This paper continues to the present time as the weekly edition of the Buffalo Daily Commercial Advertiser.

His first wife having died some years previously, on the 22nd of November, 1832, Mr. Follett married Eliza G. Ward at Fairport, N. Y., and two years later they made Sandusky their home. For more than forty years Mrs. Follett was one of the faithful workers for benevolence and the church in this city and at the time of her death the city was filled with mourners.

Having jointly with others purchased a large land estate in Sandusky, he found it necessary to remove to that place, which he did in 1834, where he has since resided. He immediately took an active part in the projects to advance the permanent interests of the town. The old Sandusky bank, the old (and for that day, fine) lake steamer Sandusky, the Mad River and Lake Erie railroad (Sandusky to Springfield and Dayton) the improvement of the harbor, the division of Huron county, whereby Sandusky was made the county seat of Erie county, were all projects of importance in which the subject of this article took an active and influential part.

In 1837 he erected for himself a comfortable stone house, in which he continued to reside until his death. In 1840, 1844 and 1854 he took a leading and active part, as editor of the Columbus Journal, in the political campaigns of those years; the last named being the first year of the organization of the Republican party, on which occasion Salmon P. Chase was elected Governor. For three years, about this time, Mr. Follett was President of the Board of Public Works for the State of Ohio, with Messrs. Farrer and Blickensderfer for active commissioners, as coadjutors, during which administration the practical efficiency of the canals of the state was much improved. * * * He has of late years lived a quiet life, indulging his literary tastes, though writing but little, ex-

emphlying a serene old age, calmly awaiting his last call, which has come to take him from the active scenes of his early life."

One of the headlines to the article of which the foregoing are extracts, was "He was the oldest newspaper man in the United States."

In December 1893, the writer had occasion to look up the record of Oran Follett (1798—1894) in the U. S. Pension Office at Columbus, O., where it was found that he was one of the three men who were drawing from the Columbus Pension Office the general pension granted to all survivors of the war of 1812. He was rated "Boy, U. S. Ship Jones."

Oran Follett lived under the administration of every president of the United States, beginning with Washington and ending with Cleveland's second administration.

The following is from the record of Hon. Martin Dewey Follett, of Marietta, O.:

"He (Oran) nominated John Quincy Adams for the presidency, as he (Oran) claims, without consultation with others, and with the purpose of breaking up the political factions then struggling in the legislature."

In regard to Oran Follett's son Joseph (1821—1895), the following is extracted from the notice of him which appeared in the Milwaukee Journal Monday, December 16, 1895:

"Joseph E. Follett died yesterday at his home, 192 Pleasant Street. He was 74 years old and had been in ill health for some months, but had recovered sufficiently to allow him to make short walks, when a fatal relapse set in. Mr. Follett was born in Ohio in 1821. After spending some time in educational institutions of Massachusetts and in commercial pursuits, he became connected with railroads centering at Baltimore, filling several positions of responsibility. In 1870 he came to Milwaukee, having been appointed general freight agent of the Wisconsin Central Railroad. In 1878 he was succeeded by Col. T. M. Malone, and since that time he

has devoted himself to literary work, which, however, was interrupted by his appointment as deputy internal revenue collector during the term of E. C. Wall.

"Mr. Follett was a man of admirable personal traits and highly cultured. A close student of economic and financial questions, he became a convert to the free-trade theory, which he defended with unusual force and persistency. Although Republican from the time that that party came to life, his convictions on the tariff prompted him to support S. J. Tilden for the presidency, and since then he had been an ardent Democrat without becoming a blind partisan. He became one of the staunchest advocates of civil service reform, he taking the initiative in starting the movement in this city and serving the association as president for a number of years.

"Earnest in every thing he undertook, it can be said of him that his motives were free from all selfishness, so he was a patriot in the full sense of the word.

"Mr. Follett was one of the most remarkable men of Milwaukee. As a student of finance and political economy he had no superior in the city or state. His brain was a storehouse of information, which he drew on at pleasure for illustrations of his points and he never failed to sustain every position with convincing proof that he was right. For some time before his death his health was so poor that he wrote little, but what he did showed the same clear and active brain that appeared in all his previous work. He had an aversion to shams of all kinds and lived as he believed all men should live, an honest and unpretending life, passing for just what he was and condemning, though not offensively, the falsities which went about masquerading as public benefactors. Milwaukee lost a valuable citizen when she lost Joseph E. Follett. His wife died two years ago."

The writer had for months past been in correspondence with Mr. Joseph E. Follett, in regard to the production of this work, in which he seemed very much interested.

FOSTER MORSE. FREDERICK.

Foster Morse Follett (1801—1862), son of Frederick Follett (1761—1804), was the father of Helen, Sarah (who married William Platt, of Columbus, O., a brother-in-law of President Hayes, and whose daughter married a son of President Hayes), and Foster Valentine, who died 1882. Foster Morse Follett (1801—1862) was a captain during the civil war and stationed at Johnson's Island, near Sandusky, O., where Confederate officers were imprisoned. He was ordered to Vicksburg to exchange prisoners and on the trip was taken sick with bowel trouble and died within ten days after reaching home. He was a very strong man and large. President Hayes said he was a very handsome man.

*Frederick Follett (1804—1891), son of Frederick Follett (1761—1804), was born in the town of Gorham, Ontario County, Western New York, November 1st, 1804. His father died three months before the boy's birth. The son received the usual very common school education in one of the old red school-houses then sparsely scattered throughout the country. In the year 1819, at Batavia, N. Y., he began to learn the trade of printer in the office of his elder brother, Oran Follett, who in that year commenced the publication of the Batavia "Spirit of the Times." Oran a few years later decided to go west, and in 1825 sold the paper to Frederick, who continued its publication many years. The "Spirit of the Times" is still issued.

Frederick Follett was married in 1826 to Sarah Sutherland and a family of seven children, five sons and two daughters, was born to them.

In the excitement following William Morgan's exposure of Masonry and his subsequent mysterious disappearance about the year 1826, Frederick Follett, being a Mason of high degree, a Knight Templar and one of the prominent members of the order in Western New York, took an active part in trying to allay the intense feeling caused, as he said, "By the rash act of a few misguided individuals." Mr. Fol-

*This notice prepared by a descendant.

lett's account of the state of feeling in social, political and religious circles on the Masonic question at this period, is extremely entertaining.

In 1836 Mr. Follett accepted an offer to serve in the Army of Liberation, then fighting under Gen. Sam Houston for the independence of Texas, and with several companions betook himself to that then far-distant country. The war was practically ended just before his arrival; the battle of San Jacinto, the total destruction of Santa Ana's army and the capture of the Mexican commander himself, all having occurred a few days previously. He subsequently traveled through the western portion of Texas, then mostly in possession of hostile Indians, meeting with many exciting adventures.

Returning home he headed an expedition to the newly-discovered copper mines of the Lake Superior region, but the vessel carrying the explorers was totally wrecked in a terrible gale on the lake and the venture came to naught.

During all these years Mr. Follett was a strong Democrat, a personal friend of Jackson, Van Buren, Polk and later of Buchanan, but during the civil war was an intensely patriotic War Democrat, writing and speaking and in all ways doing what he could for the Union cause. During Polk's administration he was appointed postmaster of Batavia, from 1849 to 1856 was Canal Commissioner of the state, an office of much more importance then than now, and was in line of promotion to the governorship of the State of New York, and could have had the nomination, but positively declined, as his private means would not admit the expenditure necessary to make the canvass.

His small fortune was totally lost later on by unfortunate ventures in the construction of a line of railroad in Virginia, and his home in Batavia being taken by creditors, his wife dying, the balance of the family scattered over the country, he removed to the City of New York about 1860, accepting a position in the Custom House, which he held uninter-

FREDERICK AND THE TONAWANDAS.

ruptedly, through all the changing administrations, until his death on January 18th, 1891.

Mr. Follett was a consistent friend of the Indians located in Western New York on the different reservations, and during the administration of President Buchanan rendered such valuable service to the tribe of Tonawandas, that he was adopted into that tribe and given the name "O-wan-e-ga." Land-grabbers had long coveted the rich level farm lands of the Tonawandas, lying half way between Batavia and Buffalo, and their plans were all but complete for the removal of the tribe to the far west and the occupancy of that part of the country by themselves at a nominal price, when Mr. Follett made a visit to Washington, laying bare the whole plan to President Buchanan in a lengthy private interview, and by his personal appeal obtained an order from the President for a stay of proceedings, which finally resulted in an overthrow of the whole nefarious scheme. The Tonawandas still occupy their beautiful lands on the creek of the same name and regard, to this day, the name of Frederick Follett with affectionate reverence.

Physically, Frederick Follett was a splendid specimen of manhood, dark as an Indian, straight as an arrow, a giant in strength, though not of large stature, of undoubted and oft-tried courage, honest, upright, extremely courteous, making friends easily, having doubtless, also, many enemies, his memory will long be cherished with pride, honor and devotion by his numerous descendants. B., 1895."

Frederick Follett (1804—1891) married Sarah Southerland, of Warsaw. The following record of their children is furnished by Mrs Frederick Follett Buell, of Troy, N. Y.:

Isaac, who died years ago.

Frederick, a graduate of West Point, who served through the Rebellion, and died afterward at Fort McHenry (see notice later).

Kate (?), who died young.

CHILDREN OF FREDERICK FOLLETT (1761-1804).

Sarah Amelia, born March 11, 1830, married William Collins Buell in June 1854, and died October 29, 1881. Her children were: Frederick Follett Buell (born 1855 at Troy, N. Y., served ten years in Troy Citizens' Corps, the 6th Separate Company, N. G. S. N. Y., married December 21, 1882, Annie W. Hagan); William Collins Buell, Jr. (born November 28, 1856, married April 1881, Sarah C. Hagan, and have W. C. Buell, Jr., born August 7, 1882, and Lydia Hagan, born February 20, 1886), of Providence, R. I.; Theron (born February 1858, died 1861); Kate (born June 11, 1861, married December 28, 1887, to Walter Livingston Wotkyns, and have Livingston, Elizabeth and Katherine), of Pasadena, Cal.

John Henry, now in Colorado.

Benjamin Franklin, an ore broker, of Leadville, Colo., whose children are Frederick Seymour (born July 7, 1872, was cadet captain at St. John's Military College); Frank Eastman, Benjamin F., Jr.

Chauncey, died February 1891, leaving no children.

In regard to Captain Frederick Follett, U. S. Army, the following is his record as it appears in Hammersly's Army Register, p. 441: "Frederick M. Follett (born in N. Y.). Admitted Military Academy 1846. B'vt 2d Lieut., 3d Inf. 1850; trans. to 8th Inf. 1851; 2d Lieut. 1852; resigned 1855; 2d Lieut. 4th Art. 1856; 1st Lieut. 1857; Captain, 1861; cashiered and reinstated 1867; expired 4 March 1869. Brevet Major 1863 for gallant and meritorious service at the siege of Suffolk, Va.; Brevet Lieut. Col. 1865, for gallant and meritorious service during the war."

THE FAMILY OF FREDERICK FOLLETT (1804-1891).

[After the printing of the genealogical notices on pages 109 and 110, Mrs. Frederick Follett Buell came into possession of the following records, which she very kindly furnished at once, but which were received too late to be embodied in the book.]

From the family Bible in possession of Benjamin Franklin Follett (1840), January 27, 1896.

BIRTHS.

Frederick Follett, born in the town of Gorham, Ontario County, Western New York, November 1, 1804.

Sarah Sutherland, born in the town of Batavia, Genesee County, New York, February 28, 1806.

Children of the above Frederick and Sarah Follett, all born in Batavia, Genesee County, New York.

Frederick Maximus Follett, born October 27, 1827.

Isaac Sutherland Follett, born June 9, 1829.

Sarah Amelia Follett, born March 11, 1831.

Hannah Smith Follett, born February 3, 1833.

John Henry Follett, born April 13, 1835.

Benjamin Franklin Follett, born December 22, 1840.

Chauncey Sutherland Follett, born October 30, 1842.

MARRIAGES.

Frederick Follett and Sarah Sutherland, August 2, 1846, in St. James Church, Batavia, New York, by the Rev. Lucius Smith.

William C. Buell and Sarah Amelia Follett, February 28, 1854, in St. James Church, Batavia, New York, by the Rev. T. P. Tyler.

Chauncey Sutherland Follett and Hattie A. Smith, May 2, 1865, in Lansingburgh, New York, by the Rev. W. H. Cooke.

Benjamin Franklin Follett and Margaret Helen Moore, May 12, 1870, in the Church of the Holy Cross, Troy, New York, by the Rev. J. Ireland Tucker, assisted by the Rev. Edgar T. Chapman.

DEATHS.

Hannah Smith Follett, daughter of Frederick and Sarah Follett, at Batavia, New York, July 25, 1846.

Isaac Sutherland Follett, son of Frederick and Sarah Follett, at Houston, Texas, October 7, 1858.

Sarah Amelia Follett (Buell) daughter of Frederick and Sarah Follett, at Troy, New York, October 29, 1881.

Frederick Maximus Follett, son of Frederick and Sarah Follett, at Fort McHenry, Md., April 9, 1869.

Chauncey Sutherland Follett, son of Frederick and Sarah Follett, at Lansingburgh, New York, March 2, 1891.

Frederick Follett (born 1804) died at his residence 231 W. 135th St., New York City, January 18, 1891.

Sarah Sutherland (Follett) born 1806, died in Troy, New York, March 23, 1863.

SAMUEL FOLLETT.
(1757—1854.)
The Last Survivor of Bunker Hill.

AT a banquet of the Sons of the American Revolution, held in Columbus, O., April 19, 1894, in commemoration of the battle of Lexington, Hon. Martin Dewey Follett, of Marietta, delivered an address (see Ohio S. A. R. Year Book, 1894, p. 35), from which the following is an extract:

“As my mind’s eye has gone over that eight years of struggle I feel proud that the last survivor of the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill was a Follett—old Samuel Follett, who died November 30th, 1854, at Worthington, Mass., aged ninety-seven years. He drew a pension, at the rate of fifty dollars a year, from March 4th, 1831, the certificate for which was issued May 16th, 1833. He was descended from John Follett, the oldest son of Robert Follett” (1625 [?—1708), “of Salem, Mass., and my ancestor was Benjamin Follett” (1677 [?—1752) “the youngest son of the same father.”

Hon. Martin Dewey Follett’s records show that Samuel Follett was born November 23, 1757, and died November 30, 1854, and that he was descended through John (1727— —), John (1695—1747) and John (1669—1718) from Robert Follett (1625 [?—1708.) Mr. Joseph H. Parsons, of Worthington, O., recently informed the writer that he spent a part of his youth at Worthington, Mass., and remembered old Samuel Follett well, having upon one occasion, with his brother, called upon him, at which time he showed them his revolutionary gun, coat, etc., and gave them each a button which had been at one time

upon his continental uniform. Mr. Parsons says that Samuel Follett was a very peculiar old man, living much to himself in the outskirts of the town, coming to town only for elections and great events, when he would drive an ox cart and sit on the tongue rather than ride inside, and that on the day of his funeral the weather was bitter cold, but the turnout of the people of Worthington and vicinity was enormous, so great was their respect for the last survivor of Bunker Hill. The following is an extract from "Secular and Ecclesiastical History of the Town of Worthington" (Mass.), published in 1853, in the possession of Mr. Parsons of Worthington, O.:

"Samuel Follett, who is still living in this town, was born on the 23d of November, 1757, in the town of Attleborough, Bristol County, Mass. He joined the army when he was in his eighteenth year, where he remained fifteen months, serving in the regiment commanded by Col. Reed at the battle of Bunker Hill. He came into this town before the close of the war, 1781, where he has resided ever since. His first vote was cast for Gen. Washington for President of the United States, when he was thirty-two years of age; his last for Gen. Scott, when he was ninety-six."

He died without living issue, as his son Samuel, Jr. (1792—1822), died, unmarried, in Windsor, North Carolina, where he was practicing law. Judge David L. Follett, of the Court of Appeals of New York, and Dexter Follett, of Boston, are grandchildren of Levi Follett, a brother of Samuel.

Old Samuel Follett is mentioned in the N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg. Vol. VIII, p. 376, and Vol. IX, p. 99, as being the last survivor of Bunker Hill.

THE DEWEYS.

THOMAS DEWEY (born probably about 1600 to 1610, d. 1648) emigrated from Sandwich, Kent, England, as early as 1630. The family records of Hon. Charles Dewey, President of the National Life Insurance Co., Montpelier, Vt., show that Thomas Dewey (the same Thomas above mentioned, as other dates and names agree) landed at Boston in May, 1630. He settled in Dorchester, Mass., where he was witness to the will of one John Russell September 3, 1633. Savage's Genealogical Dictionary states: "Thomas Dewey, of Dorchester, 1633, freem. 14 May, 1634, rem. to Windsor, m. Mar. 22 1639 wid Frances Clark (who had only ch. Mary).

Thomas, bapt. 16 Feb. 1640.

Josiah 10 Oct. 1641.

Ann 15 Oct. 1643.

Israel 25 Sept. 1645.

Jedediah 15 Dec. 1647.

Was cornet of the troop and d. or was buried 27 Apr. 1648. Widow m. Geo. Phelps, who rem. about 1668 to Westfield and with him went all the Deweys except Israel." Felt's History of Ipswich, p. 18, states: "To become a freeman each person was legally required to be a respectable member of some Congregational church."

In Stiles' History of Ancient Windsor, Conn., p. 578, the following is found: "Dewey, Thomas—(spelled on Dorchester town records Duee) was early at Dorchester, and on his removal to Windsor, sold his house and lands at Dorchester to Richard Jones." Dates of birth, etc., are also given, in which appears "Jedediah, Dec. 15, 1647," baptized.

THE DEWEYS.

The records of Mr. Henry Comings, of St. Paul, Minn., show that the removal to Windsor occurred about 1638, and the removal to Westfield, Mass., about 1669, where Thomas, Jr., and Jedediah had previously settled in 1666, "of the first inhabitants." Frances Clarke was widow of Joseph Clarke. By her third husband, George Phelps, who died May 8, 1687, she had Jacob, 1649; John, 1651; Nathaniel, 1653. She died September 27, 1690. Thomas Dewey was a juror in 1642 and 1644, and deputy to the general court. Mary Clarke, first child of Frances Clarke, married, in 1656, John Strong, Jr., son of Elder John and Joanna Ford Strong, of Windsor.

The N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. II, p. 92, mentions Thomas Dewey in a list of freemen May 14, 1634. In Vol. V, p. 365, he is mentioned as one of the first settlers of Windsor; family genealogy, p. 362. In Vol. XXI, p. 195, the deed of Thomas Dewey to Richard Jones is given in full, a quaint document.

It is to be hoped that no one will discover any connection of Cornet Thomas Dewey with the unfortunate (we might term it disreputable and brutal) extermination of the Pequods.

Mr. Thomas Dewey (1857), of Montpelier, Vt., is descended from Josiah, the second son of Thomas, the immigrant, through Edward (born March 27, 1829), Julius Yemans (born August 22, 1801, died May 29, 1877), Simeon (born August 20, 1770, died January 11, 1863), William (born January 11, 1746, died June 10, 1813), Simeon (born May 12, 1718, died March 2, 1750), William (married about 1713, died November 10, 1759), Josiah (born December 24, 1666, died —), who was son of Josiah Dewey (1641—). Hon. Charles Dewey is son of Julius Yemans Dewey (1801—1877), before mentioned. Mr. Thomas Dewey (1857) writes: "I understand that Melvin Dewey, the librarian of Cornell University, is related to us." This evidently refers to Hon. Melvil Dewey, Librarian of the State of New York.

EARLY GENERATIONS.

Jedediah Dewey (1647—1719), son of Thomas, the original immigrant, was baptized December 15, 1647. Married, in 1671, Sarah Orton, of Farmington, Conn., where they lived for a short time, when they removed to Westfield, Mass., where he was a farmer, and where he died January 26, 1719. She died November 20, 1711. Their children were:

Sarah, born March 28, 1672 (married Colonel John Ashley), died May 31, 1708.

Margaret, born January 10, 1673 (married Daniel Bissell, of Windsor), died November 27, 1712.

Ensign Jedediah, born June 14, 1676.

Daniel, born March 9, 1679, a farmer in Farmington, Conn.

Thomas, born June 29, 1682, died March 15, 1758.

Mary, born March 1, 1688, died June 19, 1740.

James, born April 3, 1692.

Abigail, born November 17, 1694.

Dr. Orville Dewey (born March 28, 1796) was descended, according to records furnished by Mr. Thomas Dewey, from Jedediah (1647—1719), through Silas (born January 27, 1763), Stephen (born March 3, 1719), and James (born April 3, 1692), who was son of Jedediah (1647—1719).

The writer has observed the names of Deweys in numerous colonial and revolutionary records, twice in the Wyoming valley. They seem to have been people of prominence in most cases.

Ensign Jedediah Dewey, Jr. (1676—1727), son of Jedediah Dewey (1647—1719), was born June 14, 1676, and died 1727. He was a farmer in Westfield. Married June 17, 1703, Rebecca Williams. She married (second husband) in 1731, Consider Mosely, of Westfield, whose first wife was Elizabeth Bancroft. The Dewey children were:

Rebecca, June 11, 1704.

Margaret, February 12, 1706.

Zerniah, March 1, 1708.

Sarah, March 3, 1710.

Rhoda, July 10, 1712 (married Hon. Eldad Taylor).

THE DEWEYS.

Rev. Jedediah, April 11, 1714 (see notice later on).

Martin, May 18, 1716.

Hannah, March 9, 1718 (married Benjamin Mosely).

The writer has been unable to ascertain, after a brief search, how this Jedediah acquired his military title of Ensign.

Martin Dewey (1716—1763), son of Ensign Jedediah Dewey (1676—1727), was born May 18, 1716, and died in Amenia (Nine Partners), N. Y., January 20, 1763. Married October 7, 1740, Elizabeth Dewey, who died October 12, 1756. Their children were:

Martin, Jr., born December 26, 1741.

Elizabeth, born July 12, 1743.

Rhoda, born March 23, 1746 (married Stephen, brother of Major Weight Hopkins).

Mercy, born 1749.

Lucretia, born March 27, 1750.

Grace, born October, 1753.

Whether Elizabeth Dewey, wife of Martin Dewey (1716—1763) was a Dewey before her marriage, is doubtful, as many of the old records omit the maiden name entirely in referring to women. There seems to be a tradition that Elizabeth Dewey Follett (1743—1832) had been related to the Folletts before her marriage. Supposing this tradition to be true, it is possible that Elizabeth Dewey, wife of Martin Dewey (1716—1763), had been, previous to her marriage, Elizabeth Follett (born 1707), sister to Lieutenant Benjamin Follett (1715— —), in which event she would have been nearly nine years older than her husband.

Elizabeth Dewey (1743—1832), daughter of Martin and Elizabeth, was born July 12, 1743. The Follett records state that she was born July 14, 1743, at Westfield. Married March 8, 1764, Eliphalet Follett. For records of the children and her terrible ex-

periences at the time of the Wyoming massacre see record of Eliphalet Follett (1741—1778). It has been supposed that her uncle, Rev. Jedediah Dewey, had given her a temporary home between the time of the death of her father and her marriage.

It is also thought that, after the massacre, she returned to her uncle's home in Bennington. These suppositions are not founded on either records or traditions, except that of the Bennington friends meeting her after the massacre. Mrs. Clark, her grand-daughter, is very positive that she returned to Bennington. We have ample evidence, however, from records that she subsequently lived at or near Bennington, as we find that her son, Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) served in various militia companies at or near Bennington during the latter part of the revolutionary war, and that her son Charles Follett married the daughter of Colonel Samuel Robinson, of Bennington.

Mrs. Clark states that when she reached Bennington she was in a most unfortunate predicament, being penniless and having six children, one of whom was sick and soon died. A short time after another child was born. In spite of such circumstances she went to work immediately to make a living for herself and her children. Her oldest son, Martin, was put to work, and she made men's clothing.

Our family records show that "in after years she was married to Esquire Noble, of Pownal," near Bennington. We have not been able to even approximate the date of this second marriage. In "Governor and Council," Vol. I, p. 280, we find reference to "Captain Eli Noble, Esq., of Pownal," and, in Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 389, a list of revolutionary officers of Vermont, in which the names of Eli, Tehan and Enoch Noble appear among the captains. He may have been related to Second Lieutenant John Noble of Captain Weight Hopkins' company, in which John Fassett, Jr., was first lieutenant. Captain Eli Noble had children liv-

THE DEWEYS.

ing when he married Elizabeth Dewey Follett. Mrs. Clark says that she remembers him, as he visited the Folletts at Enosburgh about 1810. One incident that impressed itself upon the memory of Mrs. Clark, then only seven years of age, was his peculiar way of shaving himself. He would wet his face and hand and go to the "soap barrel," an institution of the early days, which contained soft soap for the use of the whole house, dip his hand into the soap and make a lather by rubbing it on his wet face. He would then sit down and shave without any mirror. He was at one time a justice of the peace, was a deacon in the church and we suppose that he was, like almost every man in those days, a farmer. After his death, which must have occurred about 1828, his widow, "Grandma Noble," as Elizabeth Dewey was then known, went to her daughter, Mrs. Betsey Reynolds, at Cambridge. It is said that the distance was about one hundred miles, and that she rode it on horse-back, although she was about eighty-five years of age.

She spent about one-third of her time, after Captain Noble's death, with her son, Martin, at Enosburgh, and lived with her other children when not at Martin's home. Mr. James Follett (1811) and others who remember her say that she was energetic, short, thick-set and "as straight as a candle." It is also said she never leaned back in a chair. Toward the last of her life she was deaf. Mrs. Clark remembers her well, having seen much of her in Enosburgh and having visited in Cambridge while she was there, and speaks of her in the most glowing terms. The exact date of her death is not known, but Mrs. Clark says it must have been about a year after the death of Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831), which would probably fix the year as 1832, she being nearly ninety years of age.

The name of Elizabeth Dewey should be cherished by her descendants as long as any remain. While we, and those who follow after us, enjoy the delights of peace and the luxuries of quiet homes,



FIRST MEETING HOUSE IN BENNINGTON, 1760.
See page 194.

FROM JENNINGS' MEMORIALS OF A CENTURY, "BENNINGTON"

Lib. of
Public L. 1760

under the protection of the greatest and grandest of nations, let us never forget the sufferings and the sorrow which the birth of that nation cost Elizabeth Dewey Follett.

REV. JEDEDIAH DEWEY.

As Rev. Jedediah Dewey (1714—1778) was a near relative and, as, if the foregoing suppositions be correct, he must have been a good friend in times of trouble, to Elizabeth Dewey, his history will be briefly touched upon, the facts being derived from Jennings' "Bennington," although there is not a history of Vermont that does not mention his name.

Rev. Jedediah Dewey was called to the pastorate of the Bennington church May 24, 1763, removing from Westfield, Mass. He was one of the prominent men in the history of early Vermont, being a most enthusiastic patriot. In 1770 he was indicted at Albany as a leader in the land controversy with New York state, and in 1772 his influence with Governor Tryon, of New York, brought about a temporary cessation of the trouble. On the Sunday preceding the battle of Bennington, he preached a strong war sermon, urging his people to go and fight for their country. After the capture of Ticonderoga he conducted a service of thanksgiving which Ethan Allen and many officers from Ticonderoga attended. Jennings gives several anecdotes showing his stern character. On one occasion, Ethan Allen, who was an infidel, being displeased with a statement made by Mr. Dewey in his sermon, was leaving the meeting-house, when Mr. Dewey pointed at him and said: "Sit down, thou bold blasphemer, and listen to the word of God." Colonel Allen sat down and listened. On the occasion of the thanksgiving service after the taking of Ticonderoga, Mr. Dewey was interrupted in his prayer, in which he was giving to the Lord the glory for the victory, by Colonel Allen shouting out, "Parson Dewey! Parson Dewey!! Parson Dewey!!! Please mention to the Lord about my being there."

THE DEWEYS.

But Mr. Dewey proceeded without taking any notice of the interruption. However, Parson Dewey and Colonel Allen were good friends, and "if he had any enemies," says Jennings, "it has not been handed down." His first wife was Mindwell Hayden Hopkins (1712—1760), of Windsor, Conn., whom he married August 4, 1736, and by whom he had eight children:

Mindwell, November 29, 1737 (married Captain Weight Hopkins, see Hopkins record).

Lucy, 1739.

Jedediah, 1742.

Elijah, November 28, 1744 (see further notice).

Eldad, 1747.

Lucy (2d), 1751.

Margaret, 1756 (married Colonel Joseph Fay).

Betsey, 1759.

His second wife was Betty Buck, whom he married in 1761, and by whom he had six children:

Loan, 1765.

Tabitha, 1768.

Julia, 1770.

Claret, 1773.

Phyana, 1775.

Plina, 1778 (who married Anna, daughter of Colonel Joseph Safford).

Betty Buck Dewey died June 29, 1792

Rev. Jedediah Dewey died Dec. 21, 1778, at Bennington.

Captain Elijah Dewey (1744—1818), son of Rev. Jedediah Dewey, was born in Westfield, Mass., November 28, 1744, and died in Bennington October 16, 1818. He was a man of much prominence in the early affairs of the state and was, according to Jennings, next to Governor Moses Robinson, the wealthiest man in Bennington. He was a private in the company of Captain John Fassett, Sr., in 1764, and was captain of a company of Green Mountain Boys early in the revolution; was at Mt. Independence 1776, Ticonderoga in 1776 and 1777; at the head of his

company in the thick of the fight at Bennington August 16, 1777 and at Saratoga when Burgoyne surrendered. Thomas Jewett, a brother of Elam Jewett, the grandfather of John Parker (see elsewhere), was his second lieutenant, and Nathaniel Fillmore, the grandfather of President Fillmore, was his ensign. The Jewett records, as well as numerous histories, mention Lieutenant Jewett's services at the battle of Bennington. He took a camp kettle full of powder and dealt it out to the men, and after the fate of the day was determined, he found Colonel Baum, mortally wounded, and carried him under a tree. He retained Colonel Baum's cap, belt and sword. Captain Elijah Dewey's three daughters, Sarah, Ruth and Betty, married, according to Jennings, Deacon Aaron Hubbell, Captain Moses Robinson, Jr., and Colonel Benjamin Fassett, respectively. Colonel Fassett was brother of Captain John Fassett, Jr. Captain Dewey held many positions of trust, the most important of which was, perhaps, his being a member of the Council of Censors, in 1792 and 1799. The Council of Censors consisted, according to Thompson's History of Vermont, "of thirteen persons to be chosen by the people every seventh year," to inquire whether the constitution had been preserved inviolate, etc. "These powers they may exercise for the space of one year from the day of their election, and no longer."

In a list of prisoners taken at Quebec in 1775 the name of Jedediah Dewey appears. It is perhaps probable that Rev. Jedediah Dewey's son, Jedediah (1742— —), was the man referred to.

THE EARLY FASSETTS.

JOHN FASSETT (born probably about 1620), of Dedham, was, according to Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, Volume II, p. 147, made freeman 1654. Nothing is said of his age at that time, or of whence he came, or when he died. As Nathaniel, Concord, 1666, and Patrick are mentioned in the same paragraph, there is no doubt in the writer's mind but that this John was Patrick's father. Hudson's History of Lexington, Mass., Genealogical Register, p. 65, states: "The Fassetts came to this country from Scotland. John Fassett was made freeman 1654. Nathaniel Fassett was taxed in Concord 1666. There were one or more families of this name in Billerica at an early day." There has been printed a Fassett Genealogy, but the most diligent research in the markets for rare books and old genealogies and town histories has failed to bring it to light.

PATRICK FASSETT.

Patrick Fassett (born probably about 1645). Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, Volume II, p. 147, states that he was of "Malden, had Joseph, born October 1672, removed to Billerica." The Genealogical Register, Volume V, p. 173, gives a tax-list of Billerica, of 1679, in which the name Patrick ffacit (explained to be Fassett) appears. The records of Hon. Elias Fassett, of Toledo, O., show Patrick Fassett to have been a tax-payer of Billerica in 1670 or 1671, and that he had three sons, John, Josiah, and Joseph. (John born 1674 or 1675, died 1736-7).

EARLY GENERATIONS.

In the N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. XVII, p. 332, we find a certificate of "Jonathan Prescott sen'r and Jonathan Prescott, Chirurgeons," that "John Fassit, of Concord, is incapable of service, from lameness," under date October 13, 1698. This probably refers to John Fassett, son of Patrick Fassett.

Vol. X, p. 235, same authority, mentions Joseph Fassett, born 1672, who was son of Patrick Fassett.

JOSIAH FASSETT.

Josiah Fassett (1674— —), son of Patrick Fassett. Nothing seems to be known of Josiah, except that he was born at Billerica in 1674, and was the son of Patrick, and that he was brother to John, who bought a bible, printed in London in 1611, for which he paid £50. The writer has examined this Bible, which is still in an excellent state of preservation, and is the property of Hon. Elias Fassett, of Toledo. The records contained therein are faded, but quite legible. The bible was inherited by "John Fassett, son to Josiah Fassett."

In the N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg., Vol. XVII, p. 331, we find a list, signed by John Lane, of the "names of the troop which served under my command to the relief of Dunstable, July, 4, 1706." The name of Josiah Fassett appears in the list.

DEACON AND CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, SR.

Deacon and Captain John Fassett (Sr.) (1720—1794), son of Josiah Fassett (1674— —), was born in East Cambridge, Mass., April 1, 1720. Married Mary Wolley in Bedford, Mass., May 14, 1741. Died in Bennington, Vt., August 12, 1794. His children, who will be mentioned later on, were:

- Sarah. 1742 —
- John, Jr. (1743—1803).
- Jonathan. 1745 —
- David. 1747 —
- Amos. 1752 —
- Mary.
- Benjamin.
- Hannah.

• Nathan 1749

THE EARLY FASSETTS.

He was the head of one of the twenty or more families who came to Bennington in the summer of 1761. We find that the first public meeting of the town, a proprietor's meeting, was held February 11, 1762, at his house, for he kept a tavern, and he was clerk, not only of the meeting, but of the propriety. The Vermont Historical Magazine states that he lived one-half mile south of the meeting-house, kept tavern, and the town meetings were held at his house till 1767, when they were at the meeting-house. He was captain of the first military company in Bennington, which was probably the first company of resident Vermonters within the limits of the present state. From this it may possibly be inferred that John Fassett (1720—1794) had seen military service in the French and Indian wars and was selected, in preference to other settlers, to command the Bennington military by reason of his fitness for the position. The company was formed about the time of the beginning of the difficulties with New York state. The roll found among the papers of Captain Elijah Dewey is given on page 146, Vol. I, Vermont Historical Magazine, as follows: Muster Roll of the first company of Militia in the town of Bennington, organized October 24, 1764.

OFFICERS.

John Fassett, Captain.
James Breakenridge, Lieutenant.
Elisha Field, Ensign.

WARRANT OFFICERS.

Leonard Robinson, First Sergeant.
Samuel Safford, Second Sergeant.
Ebenezer Wood, Third Sergeant.
Henry Walbridge, Fourth Sergeant.

RANK AND FILE.

Benjamin Whipple, First Corporal.
John Wood, Second Corporal.
Samuel Pratt, Third Corporal.
Peter Harwood, Fourth Corporal.

MUSIC.

Benajah Story, Drummer.

DEACON AND CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, SR.

MILITARY COMPANY, 1764.

Timothy Abbott,	Isaac Davis,	Joseph Safford,
John Armstrong,	Elijah Dewey,	Jonathan Scott,
Libbeus Armstrong,	Enoch Eastman,	Matthew Scott,
Samuel Atwood,	David Fassett,	Moses Scott,
John Burnham,	John Fassett, [2d],	Oliver Scott,
Wm. Burnham,	Jonathan Fassett,	Phinehas Scott,
John Burnham, jr.,	Josiah Fuller,	Samuel Scott,
David Barnard,	Thomas Henderson,	John Smith,
Levi Castle,	Zachariah Harwood,	Daniel Scott,
Nathan Clark,	Abm. Newton,	John Smith, jr.,
Nathan Clark, jr.,	George Pengry,	Joseph Smith,
Asa Clark,	Timothy Pratt,	Thomas Smith,
Nathan Clark, [3d],	Silas Robinson,	Elijah Story,
Isaac Clark,	Moses Robinson,	Thomas Story,
Cornelius Cady,	Joseph Richardson,	Samuel Tubbs,
Johnson Cleveland,	Daniel Rood,	Joseph Wickwire,
Robert Cochran,	Benajah Rood,	Samuel Wright,
Samuel Cutler,	David Safford,	

SAMUEL ROBINSON, Clerk."

It is interesting to note, in the various records of the stirring times that followed during the next quarter of a century, what prominent military and civil positions the members of this company generally attained.

That Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794) was a man of some prominence in Bennington may be inferred from the fact that his name appears as representative of the town in the first legislature, which sat in Bennington in 1778, in which his son John was also representative from Arlington. Nothing else seems to be known of his actions during the revolution or after, but of one thing we may rest assured, in the town of Bennington, so prominent for its devotion to the cause of American independence, no man would represent the people in the legislature, who was not a true and recognized patriot. The following notice of Deacon John Fassett (1720—1794) is taken from Jennings' Bennington:

"His name is upon 'the old church covenant'; and he was one of the members of the Bennington church at its organization, and the first clerk of the church. He took a leading part in its affairs. His

THE EARLY FASSETTS.

name constantly occurs upon committees of business in the church, from its commencement and through the pastorates of the Messrs. Dewey and Avery.

"He was leader of the choir, and, with very few exceptions, the leaders of the choir, through the first century, have been from among his descendants. He removed hither from Hardwick, Mass., and he was a staunch Separate, in principle and feeling, through life. A common saying, which has been handed down, illustrates his punctuality and strictness in religious duties: 'It is as true as that John Fassett will be at prayer-meeting at such an hour'."

Jennings gives a list of such descendants of Deacon Fassett as were leaders of the Bennington church choir. They were Col. Benjamin Fassett, Col. Jonathan E. Robinson, Gen. Henry Robinson, Deacon John F. Robinson, J. Seymour Merrill and John Fay. Further mention of John Fassett (1720—1794) will be made in the chapter on Early Bennington.

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, SR.
(1720—1794.)

SARAH FASSETT, daughter of Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). Dates not at hand. Married Dr. Jonas Fay. See Fay records.

Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), son of Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). See chapter on Captain John Fassett, Jr., also his diary in latter part of this book.

Captain Jonathan Fassett, son of Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). Dates not at hand. His name appears frequently in "Governor and Council" as a captain. He was a delegate several times from Pittsford and a signer of the declaration for the cause of liberty in July, 1776. Capt. Jonathan, David and Col. Benjamin Fassett were probably among the first commissioners appointed. We find him authorized, on September 8, 1777, to procure or impress ten teams for transporting provisions to the army, and on November 28, 1777, commissioned to sequester tory effects. On October 20, 1777, February 2, April 12 and June 12, we find records of him as a member of the Board of War for Vermont, and mention is made of him January 4, 1781, as "late commissioner of purchases." On February 22, 1782, the Board of War, of which Capt. John Fassett, Jr., was then secretary, recommended "that the fort at Pittsford be removed to Captain Jonathan Fassett's house."

He was, however, expelled from the house of representatives, on motion of Captain Elijah Dewey, February 28, 1787. We find in Volume III, p. 366,

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, SR.

the following in regard to him: "He was one of the early settlers, a large land holder, quite loquacious, took a prominent part in the transaction of the public business, and, up to this date, appears to have had the confidence of his townsmen, by reason of which he had three times represented them in the General Assembly of the state, and had but recently been elected for a fourth term. He had also held the office of justice of the peace and county judge." It seems the cause of his expulsion from the house was that he had incited a riot whereby the court of common pleas at Windsor was seriously interfered with, necessitating the calling out of the militia.

Mrs. Clark and Mr. James Follett (1811) both remember Captain Jonathan Fassett. He was a tall man, long featured, and had a strong temper, perhaps due to his financial reverses and his feeble health in old age. He visited much among his relatives.

David Fassett, son of Capt. John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). Dates not at hand. The only records concerning him which are at hand are two writs issued by order of the Council August 28 and 29, 1777, to seize certain property of tories, and on September 6, 1777, a permit to take two men from the guard-house on September 8, signed by Thomas Chittenden. He evidently had some heavy farm work to do and took advantage of the tory prisoners taken at the battle of Bennington on August 16.

Dr. Nathan Fassett, son of John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). No dates at hand. He was undoubtedly in Warner's regiment on the first expedition to Canada, as will appear in the diary of Capt. John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803).

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, SR.

Judge Amos Fassett (—— —1810), son of Capt. John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). No dates at hand. His name appears in "Governor and Council" as assistant judge for several years. He removed to Cambridge in 1784, as will appear in the chapter on Early Cambridge. He removed to Enosburgh in 1800. Two of his sons were in the company of Captain Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) in the war of 1812. Hemenway's Vermont Historical Gazetteer, p. 142, mentions "Anna Fassett, a widow lady. Her husband, Judge Amos Fassett, died in 1810, while attending court at St. Albans. Had twelve children." Was judge of county court 1803—1806—1809.

Mary Fassett, daughter of John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794). No dates at hand. She married Judge Jonathan Robinson. See Robinson records.

Colonel Benjamin Fassett, son of Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794), is mentioned frequently and was a man of much prominence. The particulars of his military service are not at hand. Jennings says he came to Bennington with his father in 1761, was for some years leader of the choir, was commissary in the revolution, served in other capacities in civil and military life, was an active business man, and died in Bennington, leaving numerous descendants. His first wife was Betty, daughter of Captain Elijah Dewey, by whom he had Betsey (Mrs. Uriah Edgerton), Sarah and Ruth (Mrs. Samuel Fay, mother to Samuel, Benjamin and John Fay). His second wife was Mrs. Hetty Alvah, by whom he had Benjamin Schenck, Adeline (Mrs. Edw. H. Swift) and Mary (Mrs. Rev. Gordon Hayes).

Hannah Fassett, daughter of Capt. John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794), united with the church 1784. No other records at hand.

CAPTAIN JOHN FASSETT, JR.
(1743—1803).

CAPTAIN JOHN FASSETT, JR., (1743—1803), oldest son of Captain and Deacon John Fassett, Sr., (1720—1794), was born in Hardwick, Mass., June 3, 1743, removed to Bennington in 1761, married in 1764 Hannah Safford (1746—1810), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), and removed to Cambridge, 1784, where he died April 2, 1803. His children, of whom mention will be made later, were:

Sarah (1765— —).

Persis (1767—1849).

John (1769—1853).

Elias (1771— —).

Susannah (1776— —).

Joseph (1778— —).

Chellis (1781— —).

Hannah (1785— —).

Susannah (1788— —).

The following biographical notice appears in Vol. II, page 2, Records of the Governor and Council of Vermont, an official publication of the state:

“John Fassett, Jr., was born in Hardwick, Mass., June 3, 1743, and came to Bennington with his father, Deacon and Captain John Fassett, in 1761; removed to Arlington in 1777, and to Cambridge in 1784. Few men were more constantly in public service than John Fassett, Jr. He was lieutenant in Warner’s First Regiment, in 1775, and captain in Warner’s Second, in 1776. In 1777 he was one of the commissioners of sequestration, and, with Gov. Chittenden and Matthew Lyon, successful



THE COUNCIL.

in subduing the tories of Arlington. He was elected representative of Arlington in the General Assembly for 1778 and 1779, and for Cambridge in 1787 and representative of Arlington in the General Assembly 1788, 1790 and 1791; though in 1779, 1787 and 1788, and 1790 and 1791, he was also elected Councillor. He served in each office portions of the time. He was a member of the Council in 1779 and until 1795, with the exception of 1786—fifteen years. He was judge of the Superior Court from its organization in 1778 until 1786—eight years; and chief judge of Chittenden County Court from 1787 until 1794—seven years.”

The Council of Vermont was an institution peculiar to that state, where there was no state senate and where every organized town was entitled to a representative in the general assembly. Thompson, in his history of Vermont, says: “The supreme executive power is vested in a governor, lieutenant governor, and a council of twelve persons, who are chosen annually by the freemen on the first Tuesday of September, and meet with the general assembly in October. They are to commission all officers, etc. * * The governor is captain general and commander-in-chief of all the forces of the state, but cannot command in person unless advised thereto by the council, and then only so long as they shall approve. * * The governor and council have no negative on the house, but they have power to suspend the passing of any bill until the next session of the legislature.” Thus it may be seen that an election to the Council was quite an honor, and probably carried with it some influence. The name of John Fassett, Jr., appears continually on all sorts of committees, etc., in the Records of the Governor and Council during the many years in which he was a member of the Council. He was also member of the Board of War for a time, his name appearing a number of times in that connection, several times as secretary.

The first military service of John Fassett, Jr., of which we have any record, was as a private in his

CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR. (1743-1803).

father's company in 1764, at the beginning of the troubles with New York state. In the revolution he was one of the "Green Mountain Boys", his name appearing in the Vermont histories as ranking first lieutenant (in Captain Weight Hopkins' company) of Lieut. Col. Seth Warner's regiment, which was raised, under advice of the Continental Congress, in 1775, for service in Canada. It is possible that he was one of the "Bennington Mob", who took Ticonderoga, as will appear in the chapter on Early Bennington. The official certificate of his military service is here given, from which it will be readily seen that nothing definite can be obtained in regard to his exact whereabouts and military services during the greater part of the revolution.

STATE OF VERMONT,
ADJUTANT AND INSPECTOR GENERAL'S OFFICE,
BURLINGTON, *December 7, 1893.*

I hereby certify that the following is a correct transcript from the records on file in this office, regarding soldiers who served in the Revolutionary War. Extract from a Pay Roll it appears that John Fassett, Jr., was appointed at Dorset July 26, 1775, 1st Lieutenant in Captain Wait Hopkins' First Company in Lieut. Col. Seth Warner's Regiment, and promoted Captain in 1776. He was also promoted in October 1777, as Commissary to the Hospital at Bennington. The length of his service is not given here.

(Signed) T. S. PECK,
[Seal of Vermont.] Adj't and Insp'r Gen'l.

In these days we would think it impossible for a man to hold a commission in the military service and sit in a legislature or hold other public office at the same time. Numerous instances have been observed by the writer of men who held military commissions in the continental army while they were members of Congress or state legislatures. In the case of John Fassett, Jr., we find him filling several positions at

MILITARY SERVICE.

the same time, being a military officer, member of the legislature, Council, Board of War, Commissioner of Sequestration, judge of Supreme Court, etc., possibly not all at the same time, but certainly holding several of these positions at once, on several occasions.

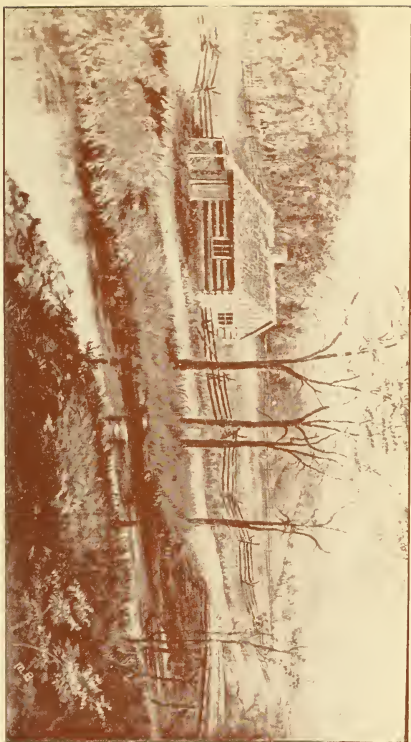
The story of the expedition of Warner's regiment of Green Mountain Boys to Montreal will be related in detail by John Fassett, Jr., himself in his diary, which appears toward the end of this volume. The Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I, p. 154, says of this expedition: "Among the important services performed by this regiment was the decisive defeat of General Carleton at Longueil, which prevented his furnishing relief to St. John's and caused its immediate surrender and also the abandonment of Montreal to the American forces under General Montgomery. Thompson says of this incident: "In pursuance of this design, Carleton embarked his troops" (about one thousand, according to Hall's detailed account, p. 217, Hall's History) "at Montreal with the view of crossing the St. Lawrence and landing at Longueil. Their embarkation was observed by Colonel Seth Warner, from the opposite shore, who, with 300 Green Mountain boys, watched their motions and prepared for their approach.

Just before they reached the south shore Warner opened upon them a well-directed and incessant fire of musketry and grape-shot from a four-pounder, by which unexpected assault, the enemy were thrown into the greatest confusion, and soon retreated with precipitation and disorder. * * * The garrison (at St. John's) laid down their arms on the 3d of November, marched out of the works and became prisoners of war to the number of 500 regulars and more than 100 Canadian volunteers. General Montgomery treated them with the greatest politeness and had them conveyed by the way of Ticonderoga into the interior of New England." Captain Fassett, in his diary, did not seem to appreciate the importance of this affair, not being in a position to observe at once the effect.

Gov. Hiland Hall says in his history: "Warner's regiment, having served as volunteers, and the men being too miserably clothed to endure a winter campaign in that severe climate, were honorably discharged on the 20th of November and returned to their homes." We then find the following in the Vermont Historical Magazine: "After Montgomery's defeat, Warner's regiment, but a few weeks before honorably discharged, was again assembled and marched immediately to Quebec and endured the hardships and perils of a winter campaign, bringing up the rear of the retreating army in the ensuing spring." It seems unfortunately true that there exists no list of either the officers or the soldiers of this regiment. This must be the regiment referred to in the biographical sketch of John Fassett, Jr., in "Governor and Council," as "Warner's Second in 1776," in which John Fassett, Jr., was captain. Hon. Elias Fassett, of Toledo, Ohio, in a letter referring to the diary of John Fassett, Jr., says:

"At that time he returned to Bennington and enlisted for the war, and was made captain. The diary kept by him for the later period was burned at the time his house was burned. He had command of Fort Winooski, near Burlington, but I have nothing as to the date." The second part of the diary might have been of great historical value had it been preserved, on account of the lack of records of Warner's Second regiment. There seems to have been one entry in it preserved, the first, in which we are told that Captain Fassett did accompany the regiment on its second expedition to Canada. The experiences of that disastrous campaign, when at one time two-thirds of the American army were down with the small-pox, and when one defeat seemed to follow another, often short of provisions and once losing their baggage, were undoubtedly set forth in that part of the diary which fire has forever sealed.

In "Governor and Council," Vol. I, pp. 123 and 124, Captain John Fassett, Jr., is mentioned as being



THE FOLLETT SCHOOL HOUSE, TROUT RIVER VALLEY, VERMONT, 1895.

See page 50.

FROM PAINTING BY MISS MARY BAILEY, ENDSBURGH, VT., 1895.
BY PERMISSION OF MR. B. D. HOPKINS, ST. ALBANS, VT.

CASHIERED AND REINSTATED.

with his company in a block-house at Jericho. The men abandoned it on the retreat of the Continental forces from Canada, and the officers of the company were placed under arrest, tried for cowardice, convicted and cashiered by General Gates. It is evident from what follows in the history of Lieutenant Lyon that a subsequent investigation must have been made and that the officers were cleared and re-instated. These officers, Fassett, Lyon and Wright, are mentioned as having served at Onion River in 1776. We have no positive record that John Fassett, Jr., was re-instated after being cashiered, but we may rest assured that no officer who had been cashiered and not re-instated would receive his pay, and we will show that John Fassett, Jr., did receive his pay. On page 160, Vol. I, "Governor and Council," we find the following:

"June 25, 1776, Congress had resolved that a colonel's commission be immediately issued to Major Dubois, with instructions forthwith to raise a regiment to serve for three years, or during the war, and that the corps of officers be composed of such as have served with credit in Canada; no officer to receive his commission until his company be raised and armed; the arms of the people enlisting themselves, to be valued by the committees of the counties, where the companies are raised, and paid for by the continent, on their being mustered. This was followed, July 5, 1776, by the following:"

"Resolved, That a regiment be raised out of the officers who served in Canada, on the same terms on which the regiment to be commanded by Colonel Dubois, is to be raised; and that the following persons be appointed officers of the said regiment:

Seth Warner, colonel.

Samuel Safford, lieutenant colonel.

Elisha Painter, major.

Wait Hopkins, John Grant, Gideon Brownson, Abiather Angel, Simeon Smith, Joshua Stanton, [Abner] Seely, Jacob Vosboroug, captains.

CAPT JOHN FASSETT, JR. (1743-1803).

John Allen, — Fussett [John Fassett, Jr.], [Ebenezer] Walbridge, [William] Dean, James Gold, — Sill, Ebenezer Hide, Gamaliel Painter, first lieutenants.

Ebenezer Beaumont, adjutant. Journals of Congress 1776, Vol. 2, pp. 219, 234."

This regiment continued in service during the war, although it is evident the officers and men were not on duty constantly. It must have been composed to a certain extent of about the same officers and men as those who first formed it, and although Ethan Allen wrote of them after his defeat in election for lieutenant colonel in 1775, "The old farmers on the New Hampshire Grants who do not incline to go to war" (see Henry Hall's Life of Ethan Allen, p. 99), "they made a grand regiment and served their country well and faithfully.

In "Governor and Council" we find an order issued to "Captain John Fassett," in regard to a "pottash kettle for the Hessians to cook in"; also in connection with the suggestion of his name for some public duty "But with his military duties, and the exaction of his time and energies as Commissioner of Sequestration, he had full enough to do." The order in regard to the "pottash kettle" must have been issued at about the time when he "was promoted in October 1777, as Commissary to the Hospital at Bennington," as mentioned in the certificate of the Adjutant General of Vermont. The extract, "But with his military duties," etc., shows that he was evidently in the military service while acting as Commissioner of Sequestration. From these extracts it might be inferred that he was with Warner's regiment at the battle of Bennington, although the regiment seems to have been considerably broken up at that time, a large portion of it being on detached service.

There seems to be a misunderstanding of historians as to the part Warner's regiment played in the battle. The conclusion, however, is that Colonel

THE GREEN MOUNTAIN BOYS.

Warner was in person with General Stark throughout the battle, and that his regiment, which was at Manchester under command of Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Safford, was marched from Manchester, in compliance with an order sent by courier from General Stark to Lieutenant Colonel Safford, arriving on the field in time to drive back Lieutenant Colonel Breyman's Grenadiers who had just arrived and were slowly giving Stark's men the worst of it. It is the opinion of the writer, who has failed to find, after considerable research, any proof that Captain John Fassett, Jr., was or was not with his regiment, that he was with this regiment not only at the battle of Bennington, but probably also during the very hard service which it had been through a few weeks previous. Thompson's History of Vermont gives very clearly the record of that magnificent regiment of "Green Mountain Boys." In speaking of the retreat from the unfortunate affairs of Mt. Independence and Hubbardton, Thompson says that the rear-guard was placed under command of Colonel Seth Warner, July 6, 1777, consisting of his own and two other regiments, but one of the colonels becoming alarmed at his position, withdrew, leaving Warner with his own and Colonel Francis' regiments, about 800 men, when he was attacked. "The conflict was fierce and bloody. Francis fell at the head of his regiment, fighting with great resolution and bravery. Warner, well supported by his officers and men, charged the enemy with such impetuosity and bravery that they were thrown into disorder." But British reinforcements arrived and the Americans, overpowered and exhausted, were routed.

In the Vermont Historical Society Collections, Vol. I, p. 207, General Stark's letter to General Gates in regard to the battle of Bennington says: "I cannot particularize any officer, as they all behaved with the greatest spirit and bravery. Colonel Warner's superior skill in the action was of extraordinary service to me. I would be glad if he and his men could be recommended to Congress."

CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR. (1743-1803).

Hon. Hiram Carleton, president of the Vermont Historical Society, writes, under date of November 30, 1895: "As to whether Captain John Fassett, Jr., was actually at the battle of Bennington it is hard to say. There is a record in our Adjutant General's office showing that he was Commissary to the General Hospital by appointment of Council of Safety and General Lincoln from October 3d to November 6th, 1777, both days included, one month three days, at forty dollars per month, etc., the whole amounting to fifty-five and six-ninths dollars. He also served from July 19th to December 1st, 1776 in the north, captain of an independent company, four months and twelve days, his pay amounting to one hundred and seventeen and one-seventh dollars." It was probably during this period of service that he was cashiered and reinstated. "The foregoing are the only records of service in the Adjutant General's office. As you know, Vermont had not become fully organized as a state until about 1778 and the records before that time are scanty. There is, however, a roll, more or less complete, of Colonel Warner's command in 1777, but the name of Captain John Fassett, Jr., does not appear." This is by no means evidence that he was not in this regiment at that time, as we know that the regiment was often reduced to half its strength by detachment. Mr. Carleton adds, after speaking of Warner and his first expedition to Canada, "He was again called out by General Wooster in January, 1776, and served until July, 1776. He was then made colonel and Safford lieutenant colonel of the regiment, and the militia of the New Hampshire Grants was generally called out to meet the invasion of General Carleton. At this time, no doubt, Captain John Fassett's independent company served as before stated."

Captain John Fassett, Jr., was a member of the Committee of Safety on October 20, 1777, but how long before or after that date he served on that committee we do not know. Record is found of him

FILLS POSITIONS OF PROMINENCE.

as Commissary to the Hospital at Bennington October 4, 1777. This hospital must have been no small affair at that time, right after such a terrible battle, and with such an enormous number of prisoners and wounded on hand.

We also find record of his actions as Commissioner of Sequestration as early as January 3, 1778. The Vermont Historical Gazetteer states that when Chittenden, Lyon and John Fassett, Jr., moved to Arlington, about fifteen miles north of Bennington, to take possession of property confiscated from Tories, "Captain Fassett took Bisco's house" and that "Ethan Allen was the neighbor of Fassett." Allen had not long been returned from his captivity.

John Fassett, Jr., appears as one of the several judges of the supreme court of Vermont for eight successive years beginning 1778. At one time he was one of a committee of four to look at the territory claimed by Vermont east of the Hudson river.

He was a member of the committee which carried on the famous secret negotiations with the British General Haldimand, by which, says Jennings, "The operations of the enemy were paralyzed, and the northern frontier protected from invasion during the last three years of the war." The other members of the committee were Governor Thomas Chittenden, Governor Moses Robinson, General Samuel Safford, Colonel Ethan Allen, Ira Allen, Tim Brownson and Colonel Joseph Fay. Their actions, a complete account of which may be found in Vol. II, Vermont Historical Society Collections, 350 pages of which are devoted to the Haldimand papers, in much of Volume II, "Governor and Council," and in the last hundred pages of small print in Vol. II, Vermont Historical Gazetteer, were of a secret nature and some few persons accused the members of the committee of conspiracy and treason. But Governor Hiland Hall, in his Early History of Vermont, p. 463, in speaking of these accusations, says of John Fassett, Jr.: "He had numerous influential family con-

nections, who, with himself, were well known for their attachment to the cause of their country."

The name of John Fassett, Jr., occurs frequently in the proceedings and papers of the committee. The object of this committee was to apparently arrange an exchange of prisoners, but under the surface there was a deep-laid plot, known only to the committee, the workings of which were at times of the most thrilling and sensational nature, and upon the final success of which depended the recognition of Vermont by Congress. On one occasion we find (Governor and Council, Vol. II, p. 130) the Governor, John Fassett, Jr., and one or two other members of this committee juggling letters just arrived from the frontier, which the assembled populace were clamoring to have read to them while Ethan Allen, to divert their attention, picked up a pretended quarrel with an officer, which lasted long enough to give time in which the other gentlemen could re-write the letters, leaving out such parts as contained secret information for the committee. The limits of this book will admit of but brief glances at the events of this justly celebrated and most important period in the history of the State.

Ira Allen said of the Vermonters at this time: "They hate Congress like the devil, and have not yet a very good opinion of Britain." To appreciate the full meaning of this remark, one must read carefully the shameful abuse heaped upon the infant State of Vermont by Congress, who refused to acknowledge her independence, by New York, who still claimed jurisdiction over the New Hampshire Grants and was exerting a powerful influence in Congress against Vermont, and by New Hampshire, Connecticut and Massachusetts, who were sooner or later dragged into the quarrel. A powerful British army was on the north. Congress offered no assistance in keeping this army out of Vermont, and New York was, according to Thompson, urging upon Congress "the necessity of immediately recalling the commissions given to Colonel Warner and the officers under

THE HALDIMAND NEGOTIATIONS.

him, as an act of justice to New York, and as the means of opening the eyes of the 'deluded people' on the grants, who had set up a separate jurisdiction, and were now desiring Congress to sanction their illegal proceedings. They represented the influence of Warner as very inconsiderable, even in the disaffected districts, and that his services were a matter of no consequence to the country." It required men of peculiar stability and judgment to take such abuse as that, not only once, but right along, and not listen to the flattering overtures that General Haldimand was continually making, in an effort to secure Vermont as an independent British province of Canada. We must not lose sight of the fact that during this period of almost three years, a large army was at General Haldimand's disposal, ready to force Vermont into subjection.

The following random extracts are from Thompson's small History of Vermont, showing the position of the State previous to and during this period:

"No alternative, therefore, remained to Vermont. She had taken a decisive stand, declared her independence, formed a constitution, enacted laws, and established courts of justice, and now nothing remained but for her to go onward with firmness and resolution; and happy was it for her that she possessed statesmen endowed with courage and abilities suited to the emergency of her condition; statesmen who well understood the rights and interests of the community and were determined that they should not be sacrificed by the neighboring states, or by the policy of Congress."

"That the State of Vermont was not represented in Congress, and could not submit to resolutions passed without their consent, or even knowledge, and which put everything which was valuable to them at stake," etc. "But they were not so lost to all sense and honor, that, after four years of war with Britain, in which they had expended so much blood and treasure, they should now give up everything

worth fighting for, the right of making their own laws, and choosing their own form of government, to the arbitrament and determination of any man, or body of men, under heaven."

"From the commencement of hostilities at Lexington, no people in America had espoused the cause of liberty and of their country with greater alacrity, or sustained it with more spirit and resolution, than the people of Vermont." "But notwithstanding their attachment to the cause of their country * * * they could hardly wish to lend their aid for the purpose of bringing the struggle with a foreign enemy to a successful termination, when they perceived that by such an event, they should be subjected to the domination of a more detestable enemy at home. In this state of things Vermont wisely consulted her own safety; and by the negotiation with the enemy in Canada, in which she was now engaged, she was as fortunate as to secure it."

"The next year the British entered upon the business with high expectations of success; and as the British army in Canada was ten thousand strong, and the frontiers of Vermont without any adequate means of defence, it was evidently the interest of Vermont not to undeceive them, but to endeavor to effect that by policy which they could not do by power."

"And thus was terminated the campaign of 1781, in which a few sagacious and daring individuals secured, by their negotiations and management, the extensive frontier of Vermont, which was exposed to an army of ten thousand of the enemy."

Among numerous reports, etc., we find the following in Vol. II, "Governor and Council," p. 292:

A Message from the Committee of the Legislature to the Committee of Convention:

As no further proposals are to be made by the Convention's Committee, at present, the Assembly's Committee propose the following articles, as really necessary for the peace and well being of this state and the United States:

SOME CELEBRATED PAPERS.

ART. 1. That the independence of the state of Vermont be held sacred; and that no member of the Legislature shall give his vote or otherwise use endeavors to obtain any act or resolution of Assembly, which shall endanger the existence, independence or well being of the state, by referring its independence to the arbitrament of any power.

ART. 2. That whenever this state becomes united with the American States, or there shall then be any disputes between this and either of the United States, respecting boundary lines, the Legislature of this state will then (as they have ever proposed) submit to Congress, or such other tribunal as may be mutually agreed on, the settlement of any such disputes.

By order,

JOHN FASSETT,
Chairman.

The honourable Committee of Convention.

Wednesday, 11 o'clock, A. M. February 21st, 1781.

As we find numerous records of John Fassett, Jr., as a member of the Board of War in 1780, 1781 and 1782, we see that he was still a prominent worker in the interests of Vermont. Although towards the last the war was practically over, the troubles with New York and with Congress grew and the most bitter feelings were engendered. A personal letter from General Washington to Governor Chittenden had the effect of oil upon troubled waters, and concessions were made, but it was not until October, 1790, that the controversies with New York were formally closed, and Vermont was soon after admitted as one of the United States, the exact date being March 4, 1791.

The following, found in Vol. II, "Governor and Council," p. 427, seems to be one of the famous papers in the history of Vermont:

Certificate for the Protection of Col. Ira Allen.

STATE OF VERMONT, June, 1781.

Whereas, Col. Ira Allen has been with a flag to [the Province of] Quebec for the purpose of settling a cartel for exchange of prisoners, and has used his

best policy by feigning or endeavoring to make them believe that the state of Vermont had a desire to negotiate a treaty of peace with Great Britain—thereby to prevent the immediate invasion or incursion upon the frontiers of this state, as appears by the letter he sent to Gen. Haldimand dated May 8, 1781, enclosing a copy of Col. Beverly Robinson's letters to Gen. Ethan Allen and Gen. Allen's letter to Congress, and the resolutions of the Assembly of Vermont, approving the same, as also the circular letter to the several states delivered to Dundas, according to his verbal report made to us this day:—We are of the opinion that the critical circumstances this state is in, being out of the union with the United States and thereby unable to make that vigorous defense we could wish for—think it to be a necessary political maneuver to save the frontiers of this state.

JONAS FAY,
SAMUEL SAFFORD,
SAMUEL ROBINSON,
JOSEPH FAY,
THOMAS CHITTENDEN,
MOSES ROBINSON,
TIMOTHY BROWNSON,
JOHN FASSETT, [JR.].

It is interesting to notice in the genealogies of this book how all of the signers but Col. Timothy Brownson, were connected by marriage with John Fassett, Jr. Beverly Robinson, the well-known tory, was not connected with the Bennington Robinsons, so far as the writer knows.

The proceedings of the Board of War, of which John Fassett, Jr., was a member for so long, are given in considerable detail in "Governor and Council," Volume II, and are intensely interesting at various times.

To reproduce such proceedings as the writer has found, of all the various committees, Board of War, councils, courts, etc., of which John Fassett, Jr., was a member, would require several good-sized volumes.

CHILDREN OF CAPTAIN JOHN FASSETT, JR.
(1743—1803.)

SARAH FASSETT (1765— —), daughter of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), was born at Bennington, Vt., July 10, 1765. She married Judge Noah Chittenden (1753—1835) oldest son of Governor Thomas Chittenden (1729—1797), the first governor of Vermont, during whose successive administrations for some eighteen years it seems there had been scarcely any political feeling in regard to state politics. Governor Thomas Chittenden was to the people of Vermont what Washington was to the people of the United States. Thompson says: "The extreme simplicity which characterized the legislative proceedings of Vermont, during the administration of Governor Chittenden, left but little room for the intrigues of politicians, or for the progress of party and faction." Extensive biographical notices of this celebrated Vermonter may be found in all the Vermont histories.

In regard to Noah Chittenden, who married Sarah Fassett, the following is extracted from Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I, p. 832:

"Hon. Noah Chittenden, oldest son of Governor Thomas Chittenden, born in 1753, had entered public life previous to his coming to Jericho, as we find him sheriff of Addison county in 1785. He married a daughter of John Fassett of Bennington and had two children, Thomas, born in 1791, and Hannah, born in 1795, wife of Hon. Truman Galusha. His son Thomas, or as he was commonly called, Judge Thomas, after his father's death, removed to Ohio,

where his son Thomas Jefferson still resides. Most of the original titles to land were lost by sheriff's sale for taxes. By this means 'Judge Noah' became the owner of nearly or quite two thousand acres, by far the most opulent land holder in town. He had therefore a great influence and was much employed in public business in town and county. We remember him well, a hale, stout, vivacious old gentleman. He died rather suddenly of apoplexy in 1835."

By reference to "Governor and Council," Vol. II, p. 132, Jennings' Bennington and other works, we find that Judge Noah Chittenden was a resident of Cambridge and afterward of Jericho. We also notice of Sarah Fassett, his wife, that she was daughter-in-law of one governor of Vermont, Governor Thomas Chittenden, sister-in-law of another, Governor Martin Chittenden, and mother-in-law of another, Governor Galusha.

Persis Fassett (1767—1849), daughter of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), was born August 3, 1767, at Bennington, Vt. She was married to Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) March 9, 1790, by her father, at Cambridge, Vt. For record of her married life, her children, etc., see chapter on Captain Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) and his children.

She was evidently at Bennington and Arlington during the exciting times of the revolution, in which her father acted so prominent a part. Her daughter, Mrs. Hannah Clark, still enjoys telling of her mother and sounding her praises. She tells the domestic events of the war of 1812 with a clearness that is remarkable for a person over ninety-two years of age. She states that on the Sunday on which the battle of Plattsburgh was fought, an itinerant Baptist preacher had made an appointment to hold a preaching service and immerse a woman at their home in the afternoon, but her mother was not particularly interested in preachings or immersions at a time when the husband and three sons had gone

SARAH. PERSIS.

to the battle, and so she took the rest of the children, Betsey, aged sixteen; Hannah, aged nearly eleven; Eliphalet, aged eight; Persis, aged five, and James, aged three, and went over to Benjamin Follett's, to find that he too had gone with the troops. They spent the afternoon with Benjamin's wife and returned home in the evening. Mr. James Follett (1811) says that he can remember only one event of that terrible day. He had been put to bed in his father's large bed and heard his father and brothers come into the house some time after dark, whereupon he had to get out of the large bed.

Persis Fassett Follett was well known for her beautiful disposition and was indeed an affectionate and good wife and mother, and her memory was highly cherished by those who survived her. The writer's mother, who remembers her well, says that she was a celebrated cook, an accomplishment which seems to have been inherited by her daughters. At one time she had smallpox, which seemed to be a common disease in early Vermont.

About the year 1812 she had all her children baptized at the same time, the oldest, John, being then about twenty-one years of age, and James, the youngest, being an infant. The children of Henry Hopkins, Sr., were baptized at the same time.

She was a small woman of much energy and force of character, although very quiet and mild in her disposition, and was a great reader and a thoroughly independent thinker, retaining her own ideas on many subjects, but with it all, was a woman of beautiful, unobtrusive Christian piety, a home lover and home maker. She had a powerful intellect, was quite a bible student, and always showed great interest in national and political affairs. While a puritan of the strictest kind, she had a manner that always interested young people and drew them to her. Her great love for her children, her husband and her home, was well known.

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

After the death of her husband, in 1831, she came to Granville, O., with her son Eliphalet, who had already been in Granville and had returned to Vermont for her. Her daughter Hannah also accompanied her. They came late in the fall, when the winds were high and the weather disagreeable, travelling from Buffalo to Cleveland by lake, and from Cleveland to Granville in a wagon. Her daughter Hannah held an umbrella in front of her much of the way, to shield her from the wind, as she was then in poor health. By some mishap their household goods were left in Buffalo, when navigation was closed by the ice, on account of which they were put to great inconvenience until the following spring. During the remainder of her life she visited much with those of her children who had come West, but spent most of her time with her son Eliphalet, at whose home, in Johnstown, O., she was most tenderly cared for until she died, after a brief illness, August 29, 1849.

The writer recently visited her grave in the old burying ground at Johnstown. The large marble slab, in good condition, bears the following inscription:

PERSIS.
Wife of
M. D. FOLLETT.
Died
Aug. 29, 1849.
Aged 82 Ys. 26 Ds.



"Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord."

For the only likeness of her ever taken, a daguerreotype, now in the possession of the writer, we are indebted to her daughter, Mrs. Clark, who took her to a photograph gallery in Granville, O., November 8, 1848, the day before Mrs. Clark's marriage.

Dr. John Fassett (1769—1853), son of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), was born, according to one record, December 20, and according to another, December 17, 1769, at Bennington, Vt., and died May 26, 1853, at Toledo, O. His first wife was Phoebe Sayles, who was born July 14, 1775, and died in January, 1815.

JOHN.

Their children were:

John L., born February 14, 1794, died August 14, 1835.

Evelina, born April 9, 1799, died 1802.

Duty S., born May 18, 1803, died November 30, 1833.

Elisha H., born January 26, 1805, died August 1, 1860.

Dr. John Fassett (1769—1853) married for a second wife, in 1820, Martha Thomas, who was born March 2, 1793, and died January 22, 1848. The children born to them were:

Lorain, born December 28, 1822, married C. A. Crane in November, 1840, and died June 25, 1842.

Phoebe, born January 4, 1825, died October 10, 1851.

Elias, born January 15, 1827, now living in Toledo, O. (See notice later.)

Dr. John Fassett (1769—1853) was a physician, practiced in Cambridge, Vt., thirty years, and removed in 1833 to the Maumee river, where Toledo was afterward located. In the war of 1812, he was surgeon of a regiment of militia commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Dixon. In Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I. p. 672, we find his name, as surgeon in the brigade of militia at Plattsburgh, November 15, 1813, attached to the celebrated letter to Governor Martin Chittenden, refusing to obey orders to return home.

In the same magazine, Vol. II, p. 100, we find him among the charter members of the Franklin County, Vermont, Medical Society.

Again in the same magazine, under Cambridge, we find the following, which will give us a glance at the times in which he lived, and at his life and his friends:

“Cambridge was formerly a favorite sporting-ground, not only for its own people, who were disposed to enter into such amusements, but for others

residing abroad, who came there to enjoy the sport. A section of the town, lying north of the river and covering the valley leading from the center to Bakersfield, was a great resort for deer. It was watered by numerous springs, covered with low, thick timber and shrubbery, and formed the watershed between Lamoille and Missisquoi rivers; and here the deer congregated to feed in summer and herd in winter. November and December were the usual months for hunting them, and the sportsmen, with their dogs, entered upon the chase with a peculiar relish.

"Old Governor Tichenor, on several occasions, came up and joined his Bennington friends, Gen. Fassett, Dr. Fassett, Judge Willoby and others then residing at the Boro', and had a regular week's hunt. They employed the most expert hunters in the vicinity, with their hounds, to go on the above mentioned premises, start the deer from their feeding places and drive them to the river.

"The sportsmen, some upon their horses, so as to quickly change their position, and others taking their posts by the river side, listen and wait for the sound of the dogs. An open, swift rapid, near Brewster Rock, before noticed, was the usual place for the deer to strike the river, in their flight before the hounds, when they would plunge into the water to elude the chase, and protect themselves from pursuit. It was, consequently, at this point, that the sportsmen usually took their stand. The sound of the hounds always electrified the persons standing in wait, and as it approached nearer and nearer through the thick woods, they were upon the lookout for the game, and were usually successful in securing it. Sometimes one, two or three in a day. This fine sport always gave occasion for a feast of venison, and the flow of the soul, but this mode of sporting has long since passed away, and the pastures for wild deer are now converted into pastures for flocks and herds."

JOHN.

Dr. John Fassett's son, Elias (1827), married, May 7, 1857, Mary E. Wales, who was born in Toledo, O., May 31, 1834. Their children were: 8

Mary Alma, born March 22, 1856, who married Morris J. Riggs October 11, 1893.

John Elias, born November 4, 1862, who died in infancy.

Mabel Lorain, born October 29, 1868, who married C. C. Oswald September 4, 1890.

The following is extracted from a local history of Toledo:

"Elias Fassett, born in Cambridge, Vt., January 15th, 1827, was the youngest of four sons and three daughters. He was five years of age when the family removed to Port Lawrence (afterwards Toledo), O. There he remained, assisting in the work of developing the farm, until his seventeenth year, when he became a merchant. Three years he was thus employed, then for six years was engaged in clerical work with various railroads coming into the city. In 1862 he retired from active business life, giving his attention to farming and dealing in real estate. Though not active in politics, he, nevertheless, adheres to the principles of the Democratic party. He was six years a member of the Board of Equalization, and twenty years a judge of election. A man of broad and liberal views, he has been a promoter of enterprise, ever ready to do his full share in matters pertaining to public welfare."

General Elias Fassett (1771—1822), son of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), was born December 20, 1771, at Bennington, Vt., and died August 15, 1822. He married, in Bennington, Vt., Sarah Walbridge, who was born April 10, 1772, at Bennington, Vt. She was the daughter of Henry Walbridge (born January, 1727, probably at Norwich, Conn., and died September 9, 1809, at Bennington) and Anna Safford (born December 31, 1730, at Norwich, Conn., and died December 31, 1817, at Bennington).

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

Anna Safford (1730—1817) was the oldest child of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775) and Ann Bottom (1710—1780). See Safford records. The children of General Elias Fassett were therefore descended from Deacon Joseph Safford through both their father and their mother. The children of Henry Walbridge (1727—1809) and Anna Safford (1730—1817) were: Solomon, died September 12, 1814, at St. Albans; Anna; Silas, born 1759; Lucy, born February 10, 1764; Asa, born October 12, 1766; Esther, born July 14, 1768; David, born May 25, 1770, and Sarah (wife of Colonel Elias Fassett), born April 10, 1772. The first three children were born at Norwich, Conn., and the other five at Bennington, Vt. Lucy died at Cambridge, Vt.

General Elias Fassett was old enough during the revolution to remember many of the events of that exciting and trying period. He seems to have inherited his fondness for military affairs. At the outbreak of the war of 1812 we find him brigadier general of the militia of northwestern Vermont. How long he may have been connected with the militia the writer has no means of knowing at this time. In 1813 he resigned his commission in the Vermont state service and secured a commission as colonel in the regular army, having command of the 30th United States Infantry. In Hammersly's Regular Army Register, p. 116, we find a roster of this regiment, as it stood April 30, 1813. Among the third lieutenants are the names of Thomas Chittenden and Benjamin Fassett. This Thomas Chittenden was undoubtedly the one who married General Elias Fassett's daughter Sarah, and the Benjamin Fassett mentioned was, without any reasonable doubt, the son of Colonel Benjamin Fassett, who was brother of Captain John Fassett, Jr. The Vermont Historical Magazine, in speaking of the military enthusiasm of northern Vermont, where recruits were raised for the Indian wars, the war with Tripoli

ELIAS.

and the regular army and navy, says: "It was also a recruiting station during the war of 1812, and in 1813 the Thirtieth Regiment of U. S. Infantry, under Colonel Elias Fassett, was mustered and drilled here, preparatory to joining the army for actual service."

Jennings gives the following extract from Hiram Harwood's Diary of 1812: "Monday, June 7, 1813.—Many of us went down to where Col. Fassett's regiment took its departure for Burlington, which they did in a brilliant manner."

The children of General Elias Fassett were as follows:

First—Henry (Dr. Harry) Fassett (1794—1872), son of General Elias Fassett (1771—1822), was born May 17, 1794, at Cambridge, Vt., and died May 19, 1872, at San Francisco, Cal. He married, February 20, 1822, Clarissa Peck, who was born January 26, 1803, at Halifax, Nova Scotia, and died July 7, 1890, at San Francisco, Cal. She was the daughter of Benjamin Peck and Mary Hardinge (Peck), of Nova Scotia. Dr. Harry Fassett (1794—1872) was one of the pioneer physicians of Ohio, and was well known as an exceptionally skilled practitioner. He was much sought after from a large territory about Johnstown. His ten children were all born in Johnstown, as follows:

Elias Peck, born January 11, 1823, died October 13, 1847, at Johnstown.

Ann, born July 31, 1824, married Parker Germain at Johnstown February 20, 1845, living in California.

Jane, born January 7, 1827, married Nicholas Dalton at Granville, April 23, 1861, died about 1880, at Davis City, Iowa.

Noah Chittenden, born June 27, 1829, married Hattie Bottsford at San Francisco, and died April 12, 1891, at San Francisco. Was one of the very wealthy men of California, having emigrated there during the times of the gold discoveries.

CHILDREN OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

Harris Hardinge, born February 22, 1832, removed to California and has enjoyed a successful career there. Was twice married and now lives in San Francisco.

Sarah, born January 31, 1835, married W. A. Castle at Granville May 4, 1854, and is now living at Alexandria, Licking County, O.

John, born April 30, 1838, and died a ^{captain} ~~soldier~~, unmarried, August 17, 1863, in a hospital at Centralia, Ill.

Mary, born June 3, 1840, married Norman Adams at Granville March 10, 1864, and died April 2, 1885, at Davis City, Iowa.

Harry Walbridge, born December 21, 1842, and died, unmarried, June 4, 1874, in California.

Willie, born May 22, 1849, and is now living, unmarried, in California.

Second—Sarah Fassett (1796— —), daughter of General Elias Fassett (1771—1822), married Judge Thomas Chittenden, who was son of Judge Noah Chittenden and Sarah Fassett (1765— —), see record of Sarah Fassett (1765— —), daughter of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803). Their son Thomas Jefferson Chittenden was living at Lincoln, Neb., some years ago.

Third—Elias Fassett (1798— —), son of General Elias Fassett, married Jerusha Munson, of Newark, O. He was actively and extensively engaged in mercantile and industrial enterprises in and about Granville, and later removed to New York City, where he became a successful operator on Wall street. In 1856, 1857 and 1858 he was president of the Central Ohio Railroad, now a part of the Baltimore and Ohio system. He retired to his farm of over a thousand acres of fine land near Granville, O., where he had erected a handsome residence. He had two daughters, one of whom, Sarah, died young, the

ELIAS. OTHER CHILDREN.

other, Amanda, marrying Frank Dunlevy, a son of Judge Dunlevy, who was one of the best known lawyers in southwestern Ohio. The children of Amanda Fassett and Frank Dunlevy are:

Kate (Mrs. McCaulley), of New York City.

Ella (Mrs. Millbank), of New York City.

Frank, of Denver, Colo.

Elias, of Denver, Colo.

The other children of Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), of whom we have no other records at hand, were:

Susanna, born May 22, 1776.

Joseph, born September 10, 1778. Known as Captain Joseph Fassett. He removed to Granville in the early days and operated a large farm just east of Granville.

Challis, born October 13, 1781.

Hannah, born December 8, 1785.

Susanna, born March 29, 1788. Known as "Aunt Sukie." Married first a Mr. Hawley, and next a Mr. Green, with whom she removed to Granville to spend her old age.

THE EARLY SAFFORDS.

THE genealogical part of Jennings' Bennington is compiled largely from a little volume (now a very rare book) "Genealogical History of the Families of Robinsons, Saffords, Harwoods and Clarks, by Sarah Robinson," published at Bennington 1837. After a long search in places where rare genealogies, etc., are to be obtained, and among very distant relatives in New England whose addresses by some mysterious process came into the writer's possession, a copy of this valuable work was very kindly loaned by Mrs. M. M. Kirkman, of Evanston, Ill. It contains also the genealogy of the Deacon John Fassett family and the Follett family down almost to the date of publication. Under the heading of "A Record of the Family of Saffords" the following appears:

JOSEPH SAFFORD,
(of England).

"1 g. Joseph Safford, with his family, were born in England, where he died. (No other record of his family given.)

JOSEPH SAFFORD,
(Immigrant).

2 g. Joseph Safford came from England to Plymouth, Ms.; he removed his family to Norwich, Ct. in 1723.

3 g. The children of Joseph and Abigail Safford were born at Ipswich Ms. Joseph (b. 1705), Abigail, John, Sarah, (d. Norwich, Ct.), Solomon."

Inasmuch as Mrs. Robinson's book is not a record of the ancestors in any sense, but is devoted

TWO DISTINCT FAMILIES.

exclusively to the descendants of the families named, it is possible, in fact probable, that the ancestry of Deacon Joseph Safford was not much looked into, and as the other Safford records show a Joseph who could have been his father, the writer is sometimes inclined to believe that our ancestor, Joseph (1705—1775), was descended from the same immigrant Saffords as some of the other Saffords of this country, especially as a very peculiar coincidence will be observed, viz., that our ancestor Joseph's name, date and place of birth, the family names in the same generation and in the generation earlier and that later, would all indicate a blood relationship between the two Josephs, both born 1705 at Ipswich. On the other hand General William Farrar Smith, a descendant of our ancestor Joseph (1705—1775) writes in regard to an ancestor of Hon. Alfred Greeley Safford: "My grandmother, who claimed cousins to the fourth degree, never claimed Mr. Safford as kin, I think."

However this may be, the ancestry of the other Saffords may be interesting to some in this connection, as there is a possibility that they were ancestors of our ancestor Joseph (1705—1775).

THOMAS SAFFORD. (Immigrant.)

A family record, loaned by Judge William Safford, of Chillicothe, O., says of him: "The immigrant ancestor. Records have been found of one Thomas Safford being a passenger on a vessel arriving at some port in Massachusetts in 1630—believed to be the same. The records of Ipswich, Mass., show he resided there in 1641, and he seems to have remained there until his death, as his name appears from time to time in the town records. He married one Elizabeth (family name unknown). He died February 20, 1667, and she died March 4, 1671, both at Ipswich (old spelling Ipswitch). There were born to this couple six children, as follows:

THE EARLY SAFFORDS.

Joseph, born 1631.

John, born 1633.

Elizabeth.

Mary.

Abigail.

→ Killam (daughter)."

The N. E. Hist. and Gen. Register, Vol. II, p. 246, mentions a Joseph Safford at Ipswich, made free-man 11 October, 1682, and Vol. VIII, p. 50, a Joseph Safford, aged 59 in 1692. Possibly both items refer to Joseph, son of Thomas the immigrant, although there is a difference in date of birth.

Hon. Alfred Greeley Safford, of Washington, D. C., attorney for the Inter-State Commerce Commission, has very kindly furnished the writer with the records of his ancestry, from which the following is derived:

"Thomas and John Safford were living at Ipswich in 1630. One or both of them came over in the 'Fortune' in 1629. At first I supposed that Thomas Safford was the original ancestor in this country, but Lieut. W. E. Safford (U. S. Navy) who made a more careful investigation than I was able to do, told me that John was the original ancestor."

"Calling these the first and second generations, the third was John, Jr., who lived and died at Ipswich. Of his family I know nothing except that he was the father of Joseph Safford, who was born at Ipswich, where he lived to an advanced age. He should not be confounded with another Joseph Safford, who was the ancestor of Col. Samuel Safford of the Green Mountain Boys, and who participated in the battle of Bennington. Samuel Safford's brother, Joseph, was the grandfather of Gen. Wm. F. Smith."

Hon. Alfred Greeley Safford (b. 1844) is descended from the other Joseph Safford, through Challis (1734—1771), Challis (1771—1843) and Challis Fay (1803—1894).

BOTH FAMILIES AT IPSWICH.

Savage's Genealogical Dictionary, Vol. IV, p. 4, mentions "Thomas, at Ipswich 1641, died 1667, leaving widow, son Joseph, born probably 1633, and three daughters." Also, "Joseph at Ipswich made freeman 1682." Also "Joseph at Newtown, L. I., 1655." In the Annals of Newtown, N. Y., p. 38, a Joseph Safford is found in 1655. Savage gives "John Safford at Ipswich 1665, perhaps brother, perhaps son of Thomas." The Safford family record of Judge William Safford seems to straighten the line through these random notes of Savage.

American Ancestry, Vol. IV, p. 196, states that Thomas Safford owned land at Ipswich prior to April 6, 1641, and gives the names and dates of birth of children almost the same as the records of Judge William Safford.

JOHN SAFFORD. (Born 1633.)

American Ancestry, Vol. IV, p. 196, gives his record as follows: "Of Ipswich, Mass., born 1633, married Sarah S. and had seven children:

Sarah, July 14, 1664, died July 21, 1712.

Margaret, February 28, 1666.

Rebecca, August 30, 1667.

Mary, February 26, 1669.

Elizabeth, February 27, 1671.

Thomas, October 16, 1672.

Joseph, March 12, 1675."

The records of Judge William Safford agree with above exactly, excepting two trifling errors in day of month, and contain in addition, the epitaph of Sarah:

"Read and consider, stand in AW (awe)
Do not sin, keep God's law."

JOSEPH SAFFORD. (Born March 12, 1675.)

The writer formerly had the Safford line running through Thomas (b. 1672), as American An-

THE EARLY SAFFORDS.

cestry gives the children of Thomas, among whom appears Joseph (born 1704-5), and Jennings says, p. 227, of Deacon Joseph Safford: "He was born in 1705 at Ipswich, Mass." The natural supposition would be that he was the same Joseph as the one mentioned in American Ancestry, but the records of Judge William Safford show his ancestor, Joseph Safford, to be son of Thomas, and to have been born March, 1704 or 5, but to have married Mary Chase at Newbury in 1728, and to have died at an advanced age at Hardwick, Mass. One solution of the problem of two Josephs both born the same year and place might be that Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775) was the son of Joseph (brother of Thomas) and cousin of the other Joseph.

Judge Safford's record shows his ancestor Challis (born 1733) a son of Joseph, to have married for his second wife Lydia Warner (daughter of Gen. Jonathan Warner, of Hardwick), who, after the death of Challis, married for a second husband Dr. Jonas Fay, of Bennington, Vt. Jennings, page 225, mentions Sarah, the daughter of Deacon John Fassett, Sr., as the wife of Dr. Jonas Fay. This would seem to be another confiction of authority, but records furnished by Mr. B. D. Hopkins, of St. Albans, Vt., show that Sarah (the date of whose death is not at hand) was the first wife and widow Lydia Warner Safford the second wife of Dr. Jonas Fay.

DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD. (1705—1775.)

Deacon Joseph Safford, born 1705 at Ipswich, Mass., died June 25, 1775 (see Mrs. Robinson, p. 35, and Jennings, p. 43) at Bennington.

The following information is derived from Jennings' Bennington: He came to Bennington in 1761. His is the second name appearing on the records of the first church of Bennington (Deacon Fassett's name being first), the record reading as follows: "To receive in Joseph Safford and Anne Safford his

DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD (1705-1775).

wife into full communion with this church." He was made deacon at the first election on record. "His wife was Ann Bottom, of Norwich, Conn., born in 1710." Several Bottoms from Norwich served in the American armies during the revolution. (See "Connecticut in the Revolution.") Ann Bottom Safford died at Bennington November 28, 1780. The name may have been a corruption of "Botham," as "Robert Botham, of Ipswich, 1652," is found in Savage's Gen. Dic. of N. E. Vol. I, p. 217.

At the first town meeting (held at the house of Deacon John Fassett) he was appointed town treasurer, and one of the tithing men. March 31, 1762, it was voted to give him and Samuel Robinson five acres of land and forty dollars for erecting a corn-mill and forty dollars for erecting a saw-mill.

The Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I, p. 139, says, in speaking of the Saffords: "They were all worthy men, and lived and died respected by all. The blood of Deacon Joseph Safford has flowed in the veins of a large number of descendants and has mingled with that of many other families. It was of good quality, and the mixture will not be found deteriorated by it."

Jennings says: "Deacon Safford brought with him to this town the records of the Newint (Conn.) Separate Church. These are still preserved by his descendants; and also a manuscript letter from the old church in Newint, signed by Daniel Kirkland, its pastor, to Joseph Safford and others, Separates, with a view to some further conference on the matters of difference between the separating brethren and the old church. These records are interesting, as containing the records of Joseph Safford's formal election and installation to the office of deacon in the Separate Church; also their confession of faith, and covenant, with the signatures; also an important case of discipline, spread out at length, showing their strictness and success in maintaining discipline in the church."

CHILDREN OF DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD.
(1705—1775.)

THE data for the genealogy of Deacon Safford's children is extracted from Mrs. Robinson's Genealogy, and the historical matter from Jennings' Bennington where not otherwise mentioned.

First.—Anna Safford (1730—1817) daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), married Henry Walbridge (1727—1809), whose name appears on rolls of Capt. Samuel Robinson's company in battle of Bennington*. Their children were:

Solomon.

Anna.

Silas, 1759.

Lucy, 1764.

Asa, 1766.

Esther, 1768.

David, 1770.

Sarah, 1772 (married Colonel Elias Fassett; see Fassett records).

Second.—Elizabeth Safford (1735—1815), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), married Cornelius Cady (1730—1809). Their children were:

Walter, 1762.

Amasa, 1765.

Jose, 1767.

Cyrus, 1769.

Sybil, 1772.

Sullivan, 1775.

Lucy, 1778.

* One Henry Walbridge was killed in battle of Bennington. He was brother of Col. Ebenezer.

Possibly it was he, and not Henry (1727-1809) who was in Capt. Robinson's company. Solomon was in same company. See also page 126, this book.

ANNA. ELIZABETH. SAMUEL.

Third.—General Samuel Safford (1737—1813), son of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), was born April 14, 1737. He was a very prominent man, active in the land title controversy with New York, representative in several conventions for defense against Yorkers, also in convention for forming the state. Was second sergeant of Captain John Fassett's military company in 1764, major of Warner's first regiment, and without any doubt major of Warner's second regiment (the records of the latter being lost), of Green Mountain Boys. Was lieutenant colonel of Warner's Continental regiment, dating from July 5, 1776. (See Hammersly's Regular Army Register, p. 33, and any Vermont history.) Was also brigadier general of militia, taking command of a brigade April 11, 1781, a command declined by Ethan Allen (Governor Hall's History Vermont, p. 325). At the battle of Bennington, Colonel Warner being with General Stark, assisting him during the entire engagement, he commanded his regiment, which, coming on the field just at the right time, fought with such fury as to break the Hessian reinforcement, enabling the American forces to drive the British from the bloody field. He was in a number of battles. Was town representative 1781-2, state councillor for nineteen years, beginning 1783; chief judge of Bennington County court for twenty-six years, ending 1807. Was also a member, with Fassett and others, of the committee having the famous Haldimand negotiations in charge. He believed in the early Puritan Sabbath, which began at sunset Saturday night. He married Mary Lawrence (1741—1821), daughter of Jonathan Lawrence. Their children were:

Samuel, 1761, who was in Captain Samuel Robinson's company in the battle of Bennington.

Mary, 1763 (who married Nathan Fay, son of John Fay, who was killed at the battle of Bennington).

John, 1765.

CHILDREN OF DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD.

Ruth, 1768.
Anna, 1771.
Clara, 1774.
Electa, 1776.
Amelia, 1780.
Jonas.

Abigail Safford (1740—1806), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), married Jonathan Scott (1735—1784). Their children were:

Lemuel, 1764.
Sarah, 1766.
Martin, 1768.
Levi, 1770.
Melatiah, 1772.
Anna, 1776.
Abigail, 1779.
Ira, 1782.

Colonel Joseph Safford (1742—1807) son of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), was private in Captain John Fassett's military company, 1764, and lieutenant in Warner's first and probably captain in Warner's second regiment of Green Mountain Boys. He was lieutenant in Warner's Continental Line regiment September 16, 1776 (see Hammersly's Regular Army Register, p. 33), and later captain of militia. In October, 1781, he commanded a company, in which Martin Dewey Follett (1765—1831) served eleven days, according to a certificate of the Adjutant General of Vermont, in an alarm to Castleton. In 1784 he commanded one of three companies under command of Ethan Allen in driving Yorkers out of Vermont into Massachusetts. (History of Eastern Vermont, p. 519.) Jennings and Governor Hall both give him the title of Colonel, probably acquired late in the revolution in the militia. His name appears in a list of colonels of the revolution in Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 389. Governor Hall mentions him as colonel in 1795. He

ABIGAIL. JOSEPH.

married Marcy Robinson (1748—1814), daughter of Captain Samuel Robinson, Sr. (1705—1767). [See Robinson records.] Colonel Joseph Safford's children were:

Marcy, born January 4, 1769.

Sarah, 1770.

Junia, 1773.

Anna, 1781.

Joseph, 1783.

Lucy.

* Esther.

Marcy married Eldad Butler, born at Stockbridge, Mass., 1764, son of Silas Butler. Their children were:

Eldad Spencer, 1789.

Joseph Safford, 1791.

Sarah, January 14, 1793.

* Ann, 1795.

Benjamin Fay, 1798.

Juliet, 1800.

Sarah (1793) married Ashbel Smith at St. Albans, Vt., and their children were:

Gardner Gregory.

Harriet Adelia.

Haskell Gilbert.

Sarah Ann.

William Farrar.

Edward Ashbel.

(No dates of this family are given in Mrs. Robinson's Genealogy.)

William Farrar Smith entered Military Academy at West Point 1841, commissioned Brevet Second Lieutenant of Topographical Engineers 1845, Second Lieutenant 1849, First Lieutenant 1853, Captain 1859, Major of Engineers 1863. Was succes-

* General Smith writes: "My aunt Ann married a Fassett. I do not know if he was of your family. He was a regular *covenanter* and used to flog me daily in school."

There were other Fassetts in Vermont, not connected with the descendants of Capt. John Fassett, Sr. The writer has no means of ascertaining just who the husband of Ann Butler was. Possibly Mrs. Robinson's Genealogy may be in error in regard to the Anna (Safford) mentioned on page 171, this book, as marrying Jonathan, son of Capt. Jonathan Fassett.

CHILDREN OF DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD.

sively brevetted Lieutenant Colonel 1862, Colonel 1862, Brigadier General 1865, Major General 1865, in regular army, for "gallant and meritorious service in battle." Also in volunteer forces he was Brigadier General 1861, Major General 1862. (See Hammersly's Regular Army Register, pp. 101, 232, 771, 772). His dashing exploit in opening a line of supplies to the army in Chattanooga won for him the following from General Grant, in a communication to the secretary of war, dated November 12, 1863: "He is possessed of one of the clearest military heads in the army; is very practical and industrious; no man in the service is better qualified than he is for our largest commands." (Official Record, Vol. 56, p. 122.) He is known in the histories of the civil war as General "Baldy" Smith.

The Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 443, mentions at length General William F. Smith as born at St. Albans, February 17, 1824. Was fourth in his class at West Point. Was on surveys of Lake Superior region, the Rio Grande in Texas, the military road to California and the Mexican boundary commission survey.

Colonel David Safford (1744—1831), son of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), was born February 19, 1744. He was a private in Captain John Fassett's military company in 1764, and in Captain Samuel Robinson's company in battle of Bennington. He married Anna Brewster at Bennington and made his residence at Cambridge, Vt. Is given the title of colonel in Governor Hall's History, p. 137. His children were:

Ruby, 1774.

Joseph, 1775.

David Brewster, 1777.

Erick, 1778.

Anna, 1780.

Orson, 1783.

Submit (1785—1807).

DAVID. HANNAH.

Alvin (1787—1791).

Jacob and Solomon, twins, 1789, died 1812 and 1791.

Lydia, 1792.

Oel, 1794.

(One of the children, Anna, married Jonathan Fassett, son of Captain Jonathan (1745—1825).

Hannah Safford (1746—1810), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), was born March 2, 1746, and died April 19, 1810. She married Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803). See Fassett records.

Mrs. Hannah Clark, who was nearly seven years of age at the time of the death of her grandmother, Hannah Safford Fassett, tells of her experience with tea during the revolution. She had tea in the house and when they wanted to brew it the only way they dared to do it was to put some one on watch to give the alarm in case any one approached the house, as it would not do for their friends to know that they drank even their own tea. Mrs. Clark tells also of how her mother, Persis Fassett Follett (1767—1849), would tell of the trying experiences of her mother, Hannah Safford Fassett (1746—1810), during the revolution. The times then were full of excitement and sometimes fear, especially when her father, Captain John Fassett, Jr. (1743—1803), was away from home. For a time news would be brought in every few days of some battle or Indian massacre, and excitement would run high. They would fear for the safety of those in the army and for their own safety and the security of their homes and possessions. By no means the least of their troubles was the making of clothes for the men folks in the army and the taking care of the crops and attending to the other farm work, in the absence of the men.

Hannah Safford Fassett (1746—1810) had small-pox, probably at one of the times when that disease was very prevalent. After the death of her husband

CHILDREN OF DEACON JOSEPH SAFFORD.

in 1803, she made her home with her son Joseph Fasset, who also lived at Cambridge, Vt., where she died and was buried.

Lucy Safford (1748— —), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), married Samuel Montague (1745—1825), son of Samuel Montague, who died at Bennington. Their children were:

Lucy, 1765.
Darius, 1767.
Anna, 1769.
Elizabeth, 1772.
Samuel.
Salinda.
Joseph.
Solomon, 1785.
Chalis, 1788.

Esther Safford (1750¹ — —), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), married (as second wife) Colonel Samuel Robinson (1738—1813), and was mother of ten (only) of his children, viz.:

Hannah (January 10, 1770—July 31, 1831), who married Captain Charles Follett (1767—1814) [brother of Captain Martin Dewey Follett].

Esther, 1771 (Mrs. Hyde).
Samuel, 1774.
Benjamin, 1776.
Polly, 1778.
Betsey, 1781 (Mrs. Sears, mother of Hon. Benjamin R. Sears).
Safford, 1784.
Hiram, 1786.
Lucy, 1789 (Mrs. Montague).
Sarah, 1791 (Mrs. Haswell).

Colonel Robinson (1738—1813), was brother to Marcy (1748—1814), wife of Colonel Joseph Safford. The entire roll of Captain (afterward Colonel) Samuel Robinson's company as it was in the battle of Bennington is preserved and is given in Jennings' His-

LUCY. ESTHER. JACOB. SOLOMON.

tory, pp. 201-202. The following names out of 66, may be interesting to note: Henry Walbridge, David Fay (fifer), Leonard Robinson, Samuel Safford, Jr., John Fay, Elijah Fay, Joseph Fay, Silas Robinson (brother of the captain), Solomon Walbridge, Jehiel Smith, Phineas Wright, John Smith, David Safford, Elisha Smith, Solomon Safford, Simeon Sears, David Robinson, Joseph Safford. (The writer cannot place this Joseph. He was not a member of the family of Challis Safford.)

Jacob Safford (1752—1823), son of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775), was orderly sergeant, ensign and lieutenant in Warner's regiment, and was in battle of Bennington. Is found in Vermont Historical Magazine, p. 158, as stating (in Journals of Congress) that he was a lieutenant in Warner's regiment and marched under command of his brother from Manchester to Bennington. He appears as an ensign in Warner's Continental regiment, commissioned August 18, 1778, resigned December 18, 1779. (See Hammersly's Regular Army Register, p. 33.) He married Persis Robinson (1759—1827), daughter of Colonel Samuel Robinson (1738) by his first wife, Hannah Clark. No children are mentioned by Mrs. Robinson. He also married Elizabeth Thurstin in 1728.

Solomon Safford (1755—1837), was in Captain Samuel Robinson's company in battle of Bennington. Is mentioned in Vermont Historical Magazine as being left in charge of some baggage at one time during the battle. He married Mrs. Submit Tupper (1754— —), daughter of Mr. Brewer of Concord, Mass. No children mentioned by Mrs. Robinson.

THE HOPKINSES.

Data furnished by Mr. Benjamin Deming Hopkins, of St. Albans, Vt. as the writer has no Hopkins blood in his veins; neither is he descended from the Robinsons or Fays, but these families are briefly mentioned on account of the numerous intermarriages between them and the families previously noticed.

JOHNS HOPKINS settled in Cambridge, Mass., and moved to Hartford, Conn., in 1636. His children were:
Stephen.

Bertha.

*

Stephen Hopkins, son of John Hopkins, married Dorcas Bronson, daughter of John Bronson, of Farmington, Conn. He died October, 1689, and his widow May 10, 1697. Their children were:

John.

Stephen.

Ebenezer.

Joseph.

Dorcas.

Mary.

Ebenezer Hopkins, son of Stephen, was born 1669. He married Mary Butler at Wethersfield, Conn., January 21, 1691. Their children were:

Ebenezer, baptized November 19, 1693 (died young).

Jonathan, baptized June 28, 1696.

Ebenezer, baptized June 25, 1700.

Mary, baptized January 30, 1705.

Stephen, baptized at Hartford, Conn., August 17, 1707, and settled in Waterbury, Conn.

Isaac, baptized November 28, 1708.

Sarah, baptized June 25, 1710.

* John Hopkins held land at Hartford, February, 1639. Conn. Hist. Coll. p. 49.

STEPHEN HOPKINS (1707-1767).

Stephen Hopkins (1707—1767), son of Ebenezer Hopkins (1669— —), married Jemima Bronson daughter of John Bronson, February 26, 1729, and moved to Harwinter, Conn., in 1738. Their children were:

Noah, born January 26, 1730. Noah was appointed lieutenant in the 6th Dutchess County (N. Y.) militia, October 17, 1775.

Roswell, born May 18, 1733. Roswell was lieutenant colonel of John Clinton's regiment of continental troops, organized April 12, 1776, and saw much active service. He was for many years Secretary of State for Vermont, and died at Charlotte, Vt., in the 97th year of his age.

Michael, born March 9, 1735. Michael was elected town clerk of Amenia April, 1762, and held the office till his death in 1773, when his brother Roswell succeeded him.

Weight, born October 9, 1738, at Harwinter, Conn. See notice later.

Stephen (— —), who married Rhoda Dewey (1746— —), daughter of Martin Dewey (1716—1763). Many of their descendants lived in Swanton, Vt., about 1825. He died in Otsego County, N. Y.

Benjamin (— —). Benjamin was adjutant of Colonel Seth Warner's regiment. He married Jerusha Rudd, who, with several of her children, settled in Fairfax, Vt. He was killed by Indians at Bloody Brook, near Fort Edward, N. Y., in 1780.

Reuben, born June 1, 1748. Reuben was adjutant of a regiment of New York troops during the revolution and a brigadier general in the war of 1812. He died at Edwardsville, Ill., in 1819.

Captain Stephen Hopkins (1707—1767) appears to have moved from Harwinter, Conn., about 1742, and settled at Nine Partners (now Amenia), N. Y., where, according to the records of the town and church, he became a prominent and useful man. Upon a subscription for the building of a meeting-house, dated Nine Partners, February 6, 1758, his name appears first for the sum of £20. The names of

THE HOPKINSES.

his four eldest sons are also on the paper for smaller sums. Jedediah Dewey subscribed £10 for this meeting-house. The site for the meeting-house and land for a burying ground were given by Captain Stephen Hopkins (1707—1767). He died at Nine Partners, N. Y., February 8, 1767. His widow died at Bennington October 22, 1792, aged 86 years. Her grave, with others of our ancestors, is tenderly cared for by the good people of Bennington.

Their sons, except Michael and Reuben, emigrated to Vermont before the revolutionary war, and all except Michael, who died before the war, and Stephen, who was an invalid, held commissions in the Continental army.

Major Weight Hopkins (1738—1779), son of Capt. Stephen Hopkins (1707—1767), married Mindwell, daughter of Rev. Jedediah Dewey, and moved to Bennington about 1766. He owned and carried on a farm in the east part of the town until July 4, 1775, when he was elected sixth captain of a battalion of seven companies, of which Ethan Allen was lieutenant colonel and Seth Warner major. On the 27th of July, the same year when Allen was dropped by the Vermont convention held at Dorset, and Warner was placed in command, Hopkins was pushed forward to be first captain. (John Fassett, Jr., was his first lieutenant. See Diary).

On the 5th of July, 1776, Congress resolved "That a regiment be raised out of the officers who served in Canada and that the following named persons be appointed officers. Seth Warner, colonel; Samuel Safford, lieutenant colonel; Elisha Painter, major. Of the captains the first named was Weight Hopkins. Captain Hopkins served in Canada and was with Warner at the capture of St. John's and Montreal in 1775, and in the disastrous retreat later on, in 1776.

According to family traditions he was not in the Bennington battle August 16, 1777, it being sup-

MAJOR WEIGHT HOPKINS.

posed that he was on detached service, as probably about half of Warner's regiment was at that time.

Mr. B. D. Hopkins states, in a letter of recent date: "My great-grandfather, Weight Hopkins, was killed by Indians and tories on Diamond Island, Lake George, July 15, 1779. I had a long search for the date before I found it. At last I struck a Lake George historian, Rev. B. F. DaCosta, of New York, who had copied the official (British) report from revolutionary records in the British museum at London. Besides the date, other particulars are given. Before I found the Rev. B. F. Da Costa, I of course wrote the Pension Department. The best information I received from there was the affidavit of Martin D. Follett, made in 1820, as follows: 'Major Weight Hopkins was killed some time in the summer of 1779, I believe.' Major Hopkins was with a detachment of Warner's regiment stationed at Fort George, with Lieutenant Colonel Safford in command. Hopkins and party were out on a pleasure excursion and were surprised by the Indians and tory scouts. Some women and children were with the party, who were killed and scalped."

The children of Major Weight Hopkins were:

Mindwell (— —).

Deadanna (— —).

Lovisa (— —).

Henry (born 1769—died 1847).



Henry Hopkins (1769—1847), son of Major Weight Hopkins, married, January 27, 1789, Sarah, daughter of Dr. Jonas Fay by his first wife, Sarah Fassett (who was daughter of Captain John Fassett, Sr. [1720—1794], see Fassett records). Their children were:

Wait (1790—1861), a soldier of the war of 1812.

Fay (1792—1879).

Auretta (1793—1829).

Lovisa (1795—1872).

Henry, Jr. (1797—1852), a volunteer at Plattsburgh in 1814.

THE HOPKINSES.

Heman (1800—1892).

Sarah (1802—1804).

Jonas Fay (1804—1873).

Jedediah Dewey (1808—1890).

Henry Hopkins died 1847 and his wife 1820 at Enosburgh, Vt.

Henry Hopkins, Jr. (1797—1852), son of Henry Hopkins (1769—1847), married Lois Blaisdell (1798—1894) February 5, 1821, at Cambridge, Vt. Their children were:

Mary Ann (born December 14, 1821).

Herman (born April 24, 1823, died January 2, 1892).

Silas (born July 31, 1825).

Daniel (born March 23, 1827).

Henry (born June 15, 1832, died March 21, 1880).

Benjamin Deming (born October 16, 1834).

Emerette (born February 5, 1837).

Stephen Dewey (born January 16, 1840).

THE ROBINSONS.

SAMUEL ROBINSON (1668—1730) was, according to Mrs. Robinson's Genealogy, "Born at Bristol, England, 1668. He emigrated to Cambridge, Mass., and died there 1730. Cambridge was the birthplace of all his children." Jennings' Bennington, which devotes many pages to the Robinsons, says: "It is said that the elder Samuel Robinson is supposed to have been a distant connection of the Rev. John Robinson, of Leyden (pastor on that side of the water to the Pilgrims of the Mayflower)."

Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), son of Samuel Robinson (1668—1730), was born in 1705, married Marcy Leonard (1713—1795), of Southbury, Mass. She died June 5, 1795, at Bennington. Jennings says of him: "He was the acknowledged leader in the band of pioneers in the settlement of the town (Bennington), and continued to exercise almost a controlling authority in the affairs of the town the remainder of his life. * * * He was captain of a company in Colonel Ruggles' regiment of provincials, and served as such on the frontier in 1755, 1756. He was at the head of his company in the battle of Lake George, when the French were defeated by Generals Johnson and Lyman. He was deacon in the old church and afterward in the Separate church in Hardwick. * * * Many facts attest his ability that he conceived, organized and set on foot the settlement of this part of the country; that he was so prompt and resolute to resist the claims of New York officials to the lands of this territory. It is related, when the surveyors came from New York upon his lands, he cut their chain in two

with his hoe, but when they desisted from their attempt, he invited them into his house and treated them in the most hospitable manner; that he was deputed to London as representative of the settlers here, in the British court, and enabled, as such, to gain the ear of His Majesty, and secure two very important and significant orders from the crown in favor of the settlers, and against the government of the Province of New York." He sailed from New York for England, as agent for the settlers of the Hampshire Grants, December 25, 1766, and landed at Falmouth January 30th, 1767. While in the discharge of his duties in London he took the smallpox and died in October, 1767. He was the first magistrate in Vermont. Of his wife Jennings says, quoting a letter from one of her descendants, "She was accustomed to take one of her sons with her, and ride to Albany on horseback, transact business, make her purchases and return." "When living in their log house, while her husband was still living, but in England, and her children, David, Jonathan and Anna were with her, the wolves came up at night and tried at the doors and windows to obtain entrance. She knocked upon the door to frighten them from the immediate proximity, then seized firebrands from the fire, opened the door and waved them and shouted with all her strength. The wolves fled away and were no more seen or heard by her." She was a pious woman and much revered in the Bennington church.

The children of Captain Samuel Robinson, Sr. (1705—1767) were:

First.—Leonard Robinson, son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), born July 27, 1736, died September 29, 1827. Had sixteen children. Was first sergeant of Captain John Fassett's company in 1764. Was in his brother Samuel's company in battle of Bennington. "His aim," says Jennings, "was quick and deadly, and he declared that every time he shot he saw a man fall, 'but,' said he, 'I prayed the Lord to have mercy on his soul.'"

CHILDREN OF CAPT. SAMUEL ROBINSON, SR.

Second.—Colonel Samuel Robinson (1738—1813), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), born August 15, 1738, died May 3, 1813. Married Hannah Clark for first wife, and for second wife Esther Safford (1750— —), daughter of Deacon Joseph Safford (1705—1775). See Safford record. Was an active man in the early affairs of the town. Commanded a company of militia in battle of Bennington; rose to be a colonel. Was overseer of tory prisoners, representative in 1779 and 1780, and member of Board of War for three years. Was justice of the peace and judge of Special Court, and one of the eight persons in the secret of the Haldimand affair; a man of great courage, kindness and generosity.

Third.—Governor Moses Robinson (1741—1813), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), born March 26, 1741, died May 26, 1813. Married Mary Fay (1743—1801), daughter of Stephen Fay (1713—1781) for first wife, by whom he had six sons and one daughter. His second wife was Susannah Howe. Of his children were: Captain Moses Robinson, Jr., who was a member of Council in 1814, representative, etc., and who married Ruth, daughter of Captain Elijah Dewey; Major Aaron Robinson, who was town clerk seven years, justice of the peace twenty-three years, judge, church clerk, etc., and who married Sarah, daughter of Major Weight Hopkins; Nathan, father of Governor John Staniford Robinson (governor of Vermont 1853). Governor Moses Robinson was town clerk nineteen years, colonel of a regiment of militia at Mount Independence, member of Council of Safety 1777, chief justice of Supreme Court of Vermont at its formation, and for ten years agent for Vermont in Continental Congress, United States Senator and Governor of Vermont. He was deacon in the church, very pious and the wealthiest man in Bennington. Thompson's Gazetteer of Vermont says that he "was the first colonel of militia in the state, and with his regiment, was often in active service during the war."

THE ROBINSONS.

Fourth.—Paul Robinson (1743—1754), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), born October, 1743, and died 1754.

Fifth.—Silas Robinson (1746— —), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), born April, 1746, died at St. Albans. Married Susannah Weeks (1750 — —). His son Paul married Anna, daughter of General Samuel Safford (1737—1813). Was private in Captain John Fassett's company in 1764, and in his brother's company in battle of Bennington.

Sixth.—Marcy Robinson (1748—1814), daughter of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), was born October, 1748, and died at Bennington May 7, 1814. Married Colonel Joseph Safford (1742—1807). See Safford record.

Seventh.—Sarah Robinson (1751— —), daughter of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), was born November, 1751, and married Benjamin Fay (1750—1786), son of Stephen Fay (1713—1781). Their children were: Samuel (married Ruth, daughter of Colonel Benjamin Fassett), Moses, Benjamin, Joseph, Ezra, Sarah, Charlotte.

Eighth.—General David Robinson (1754—1843), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), was born November 22, 1754, and died December 12, 1843. Married Sarah Fay (1757—1801), daughter of Stephen Fay (1713—1781). Children were: Sarah, David, Ruth, Stephen, Hiram, Hiram (2d), Heman, of whom those who lived became prominent persons. Was private in his brother's company in battle of Bennington. Rose by regular promotion to rank of major general of militia, which he resigned in 1817. Was sheriff twenty-two years and United States Marshal eight years. A man of great courage. In the winter of 1776-7 he, with a man named Deming and several others whom he persuaded to accompany him, travelled two hundred miles in the snow, to a place where a company of women and children were

CHILDREN OF CAPT. SAMUEL ROBINSON, SR.

left defenseless, and conveyed them to a place of safety on the Connecticut river and returned to Bennington. Toward the close of his life his mind weakened.

Ninth.—Judge Jonathan Robinson (1756—1819), son of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), was born August 11, 1756, and died November 3, 1819. He married Mary Fassett (1754—1822), daughter of Deacon John Fassett (1720—1794). Their children were: Jonathan Edwards, Mary, Henry and Isaac Tichenor, all prominent people, Henry being at one time a paymaster in the U. S. Army. Was a lawyer, town clerk six years, representative thirteen years, chief judge of Supreme Court six years, United States senator eight years, probate judge four years. Was very much averse to aristocratic pretensions, and was fond of wrestling. Jennings says of him: "When a senator in Congress, he came home on one occasion, and Sunday morning as the family were prepared for church, his daughter Polly, afterwards Mrs. Merrill, came into the room dressed handsomely in silk; he noticed the dress at once, and made inquiry about it; his daughter answered his inquiries, relating that her mother had purchased it of a peddler, calling his attention to its excellent quality, and seeking his approval of it as a good bargain. 'I do not care about that,' said he, 'go take it off, and put on your calico dress, or you shall not go to meeting with me; when your mates have silk dresses to wear, then you may wear one.' Her mother, who was more aristocratically inclined, had bought the dress when he was absent at Washington." Jennings says also that he always gave the boys money with which to buy powder on July 4th and August 16th, the two days for fireworks.

Tenth.—Anna Robinson (1759— —), daughter of Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), was born October 2, 1759. Married Isaac Webster (1755—1827), son of Joseph Webster (1733—1795). They had ten children.

THE FAYS.

(By Mr. Benjamin Deming Hopkins, of St. Albans, Vt.)

JOHAN FAY (1648—1690)* married Mary Brigham, and for a second wife, widow Susana Morse. He died December 5, 1690. His children, born in Marlboro, Mass., were:

John, November 30, 1669.
David, October 15, 1671.
Samuel, October 11, 1673.
Mary, February 10, 1675.
David, April 23, 1677.
Greshom, October 19, 1681.
Ruth, July 6, 1684.
Deliverance, February 20, 1686.



John Fay (1669—1747), son of John Fay (——— 1690), married Elizabeth Wellington. He died January 5, 1747. His children, born in Westboro, Mass., were:

Bathsheba, January 1, 1693.
Eunice, June 2, 1696.
Mary, September 29, 1698.
John, December 5, 1700.
Lydia, 1702.
Dina, September 5, 1705.
James, December 27, 1707.
Mehitabel, 1710.
Benjamin, August 5, 1712.
Stephen, May 5, 1715.

Stephen Fay (1715— ——), son of John Fay (1669—1747), married Ruth Child, March, 1734. Chil-

* The Spooner Genealogy, pp. 94-95, says: "The Fays were of French origin. During the persecution of the Huguenots, they fled to Wales, and from Wales the ancestor of the American family came to the colonies." John Fay (1648-1690) arrived at Boston, June 27, 1656, on the 'Speedwell.' His wife Mary, mother of John, was daughter of Thomas Brigham. John (1669-1747) "held the principal town offices" in Westboro.

LANDLORD STEPHEN FAY.

dren born to them were:

John, December 23, 1734.

Jonas, January 28, 1737.

Stephen, February 19, 1739.

Ruth, May 12, 1741.

Mary, October 16, 1743.

Beulah, January 29, 1746.

Elijah, March 5, 1748.

Benjamin, November 22, 1750.

Joseph, September 11, 1752.

David, December 3, 1761.

The birth of the first four named above is recorded in Westboro, Mass., and all except the last, David, are recorded in Hardwick, Mass.

In regard to Stephen Fay and his children, the following notices are extracted from Jennings' "Bennington":

Among the early settlers, Stephen Fay (son of John Fay and Elizabeth Wilmington), who came to Bennington in 1766, occupied a prominent position as landlord of the Green Mountain House, afterward Catamount Tavern, as father of an influential family; and as exhibiting a spontaneous instance of moral sublimity in connection with the death of his son John in Bennington battle, he has won for his name a bright place in the history of the town. He sent five of his sons (John, Elijah, Benjamin, Joseph and David) to the bloody rescue of his country on that eventful day. One of them was shot through the head and died instantly. The following is the account in a Connecticut newspaper of November, 1777, three months after the battle, by an "eye-witness": "A good old gentleman who had five sons in the field at the celebrated action of Bennington, August 16, 1777, whose furrowed cheeks and silvered locks added venerableness to his hoary brows, being told that he was unfortunate in one of his sons, replied, 'What, has he misbehaved? Did he desert his post? Or run from the charge?' 'No, sir,' said the informant, 'worse than that, he is among the slain; he fell contending mightily in the cause.' 'Then I am

THE FAYS.

satisfied,' replied the venerable sire, 'bring him in and lay him before me, that at leisure I may behold and survey the darling of my soul'; upon which the corpse was brought and laid before him, all besmeared with dirt and gore. He then called for a bowl of water and a napkin, and with his own hands washed the gore from his son's corpse, and wiped his gaping wounds with a complacency, as he himself expressed it, which before he had never felt or experienced."

John Fay was forty-three years of age at the time of his death. He left a widow and children, and many of his descendants are now living in the northern part of this state. Of the circumstances of his death the following have been related. He was fighting behind a tree. His last words, as he raised his musket to fire once more at the enemy, were, "I feel that I am fighting in a good cause." And as his eye ran along the barrel, taking aim, his head just exposed from behind the tree, a ball struck him in the very center of his forehead, and he fell with his gun undischarged. Quick as lightning ran the cry over the ranks of his townsmen, "John Fay is shot!" Maddened to fury they sprang from behind the trees, fired their guns in the very faces of the foe, and, clubbing the breeches, leaped over the breastwork with an impulse of onset nothing mortal could resist.

Mary, daughter of Stephen Fay, and first wife of Governor Moses Robinson, and mother of his children, united with this church May 16, 1765.

Benjamin Fay, son of Stephen Fay, was the first sheriff in the county and state. He was born November 22, 1750. He was sheriff from March 26, 1778, until October, 1781, and died in 1786. He married Sarah, daughter of Samuel Robinson, Sr. She united with the church at thirteen and a half years of age. After the death of her first husband she married General Heman Swift, of Cornwall, Conn.

Colonel Joseph Fay, son of Stephen Fay, was born at Hardwick about 1752, and came to Bennington, a member of his father's family, in 1776. He



THE CATAMOUNT TAVERN, BENNINGTON.

FROM "GOVERNOR AND COUNCIL."

*Boston
Public Library*

DR. JONAS FAY.

was secretary to the Council of Safety, and of the State Council, from September, 1777, to 1784, and secretary of the state from 1778 to 1781. He was the associate of Ira Allen in conducting the famous negotiation with General Haldimand. He married Margaret, daughter of the Rev. Mr. Dewey.

Judge David Fay, the youngest son of Stephen Fay, married Mary Stanniford, daughter of John Stanniford, Windham, Conn.

Dr. Jonas Fay (1737— —), son of Stephen Fay (1715 — —), married Sarah Fassett, daughter of Captain John Fassett, Sr. (1720—1794), May 1, 1760, and for a second wife widow Lydia Safford (see Safford records), November 20, 1777. Children born by first wife were:

Josiah, May 1, 1761.

Ruth, May 2, 1763.

Polly, January 12, 1765.

Sarah, March 28, 1767.

Challis, September 12, 1768, died aged 4 months.

Sukey, October 2, 1769.

Challis, March 13, 1772.

Children by second wife were:

Twin sons Heman Allen and Ethan Allen and Lydia.

It is likely that the five youngest children were born in Bennington, as Dr. Fay appears to have left Hardwick, Mass., in 1768. In "Connecticut in the Revolution," p. 32, we find that Dr. Jonas Fay received pay from Connecticut for medicine and services from May 3, to June 25, 1775, in the Ticonderoga Enterprise. Mrs. Hannah Clark remembers that Dr. Jonas Fay visited at the house of her father, Captain M. D. Follett, in Enosburgh, when she was young. Her recollection of him is indistinct, but she says he was quite a polished old gentleman, and she thinks he wrote the family records in her father's family bible, now in possession of Hon. M. D. Follett (1826), of Marietta, O.

Josiah was a physician and practiced his calling in Bennington. It has been impossible to learn that

THE FAYS.

he married or when or where he died.

Ruth married Colonel Alex Brush and settled in Vergennes, Vt.

Polly married Bildad Hubbell and settled in Cambridge, Vt.

Sarah married Henry Hopkins—who was a grandson of Rev. Jedediah Dewey—and settled in Enosburgh, Vt. She died in 1820. Her husband died in 1847.

Sukey married John Fay and lived in Burlington, Vt.

Heman Allen was educated at West Point and became a major in the U. S. army. His complete military record may be found in Hammersly's Army Register, p. 434, and in an early West Point Register, p. 57.

Ethan Allen kept hotel in Charlotte, Vt., and died at Queensburg (Fort Ann), N. Y.

Lydia, the youngest of Dr. Fay's children married Uriah Edgerton.

Jennings says of Jonas Fay: Dr. Jonas Fay was the second child of Stephen Fay. He was born at Hardwick, Mass., January 13, 1737. He was a man of great versatility, boldness and determination, and of acknowledged ability and skill as draughtsman and composer of public documents.

(It will be observed that the date given by Jennings in the foregoing paragraph does not agree with the family records.)

His public career commenced at an early age, while the family still resided in Hardwick. In 1756, being then nineteen years of age, he was clerk to the military company of Captain Samuel Robinson, Sr., in the campaign of the French war at Fort Edward and Lake George.

He was twenty-nine years of age when he came to Bennington, and at once took a prominent position among the leading actors who came upon the stage in that eventful period of the history of the town and state and nation; and it is difficult to tell in which of these relations, if not in all equally, his services were the most important.

In 1772, when Governor Tryon invited the peo-

ple of Bennington to send agents to New York to inform him of the grounds of their complaint, he, with his father, was appointed for that purpose. He was clerk to the convention of settlers that met in 1774, and resolved to defend by force Allen, Warner and others who were threatened with outlawry and death by the New York Assembly, and as such clerk certified their proceedings for publication. He served as surgeon in the expedition under Allen at the capture of Ticonderoga. He was continued in that position by the Massachusetts committee who were sent to the lake in July, 1775, and also appointed by them to muster troops as they arrived for the defence of that post. He was also surgeon for a time to Colonel Warner's regiment.

In January, 1776, he was clerk to the convention at Dorset that petitioned Congress to be allowed to serve in the common cause of the country as inhabitants of the New Hampshire Grants, and not under New York, and also of that held at the same place in July following. He was a member of the convention which met at Westminster in January, 1777, and declared Vermont to be an independent state, and was appointed chairman of a committee to draw up a declaration and petition announcing the fact and their reasons for it, to Congress, of which declaration and petition he was the draughtsman and author. He was secretary to the convention that formed the constitution of the state, in July, 1777, and was one of the Council of Safety, then appointed to administer the affairs of the state until the Assembly, provided for by the constitution, should meet; was a member of the State Council for seven years, from 1778; a judge of the Supreme Court in 1782; judge of probate from 1782 to 1787, and he attended the Continental Congress at Philadelphia as the agent of the state under appointments made in January, 1777, October, 1779, June, 1781 and February, 1782.

Dr. Jonas Fay's daughter, Sarah, married Henry Hopkins, only son of Major Wait Hopkins, and grandson of the Rev. Mr. Dewey. These had a son, Deacon Fay Hopkins, of Oberlin, O.



EARLY BENNINGTON.

BENNINGS says: "Captain Samuel Robinson (1705—1767), returning to his home in Massachusetts from one of the campaigns of the Continental Army in the French war, mistaking his route, passed, by accident, this way, and, impressed by the attractiveness of the country, resolved to obtain others to join him and come up and settle here." Twenty-two persons, including women and children of the families of Peter and Eleazer Harwood and Samuel and Timothy Pratt, from Amherst, Mass., and Leonard and Samuel Robinson, Jr., from Hardwick, Mass., reached the place June 18, 1761. Other families, including those of Samuel Robinson, Sr., and John Fassett, from Hardwick, Mass., Joseph Safford, John Smith, John Burnham and Benajah Rood, from Newint, Conn., Elisha Field and Samuel Montague, from Sunderland, Mass., James Breckenridge, Ebenezer Wood, Samuel and Oliver Scott, Joseph Wickwire and Samuel Atwood, came during the summer and fall. They brought the seed for sowing the land and provisions for subsistence until crops could be grown, upon horses. "The first year of the settlement must have been one of much privation and hardship; the tenements, huts with logs for walls, and bark and brush for the roof. * * * The season, however, appears to have been uncommonly mild; the setting in of winter providentially postponed to an unusually late period." These statements are corroborated by several other historians of Vermont in somewhat the same language.

EARLY BENNINGTON.

The first proprietors' meeting was held at the house, or rather the tavern, of John Fassett, Sr. Samuel Robinson was moderator and John Fassett, Sr., clerk.

At this meeting the following was the first transaction: "Chose Deacon Joseph Safford, Esq., Samuel Robinson, John Fassett, Ebenezer Wood, Elisha Field, John Burnham, and Abraham Newton, a committee to look out a place to set the meeting-house." The site for the meeting-house was evidently selected first and other public improvements adjusted to it. The widened road north of the meeting-house plot was designated "The Parade." The precise date of building it is not known, but it was occupied by 1766, and used until the close of the century, when it was replaced by a new one. Jennings' History, being out of print, not obtainable by the reader of to-day, is here quoted word for word: "The size of this meeting-house was fifty by forty, with the addition of a porch twenty feet square. There was no steeple. The porch extended upward to the roof, and in the upper story a school was kept for some years. * * * There were galleries on three sides of the house, square pews, ornamented with little railings, in the place of a top panel, the balusters of which would be occasionally loose so as to turn round in their places and furnish a little diversion for listless young worshippers. There was a sounding board over the pulpit, three doors for entrance and exit—one through the porch on the east side toward the burying ground and opposite the pulpit which was in the middle of the west side, and two other doors opposite each other, on the north and south sides respectively. The building lengthwise stood north and south, with the roof sloping to the east and west; there was a main aisle through the center from the pulpit to the porch, running east and west, and aisles from the north and south (end) doors, going round and so arranged as to leave a tier of wall pews all round the house, and two tiers of square pews on

THE FIRST MEETING HOUSE.

each side the main aisle in the body of the house. In the front seat of the gallery opposite and on either side of the pulpit, sat the singers (led for so many years by John Fassett, Sr.) That there was not always due order in the house in time of worship appears from an entry in the town records, March 26, 1777,: 'Voted, that such persons as do continue playing in the meeting on the Lord's day, or in the worship of God, be complained of to the Committee of Safety for said town, who are hereby authorized to fine them discretionary.'

"In this meeting-house proprietors' meetings were continually held, also town meetings; even after the erection of the court-house, town meetings were held occasionally here. In this first meeting-house the people met to worship God and give thanks after the taking of Ticonderoga, when that redoubtable fortress obeyed the summons of Ethan Allen to "Surrender in the name of Jehovah and the Continental Congress."* Colonel Allen, being a resident of Bennington and having returned with other officers to be present at the services, this circumstance gave peculiar interest to the occasion. From the pulpit under that sounding-board, the Rev. Mr. Dewey preached a war sermon the Sunday preceding the Bennington battle. To this meeting-house the Hessians and others, prisoners captured in that battle, were brought for safe custody. It was as they were marching in solemn sadness hither, and while they were all passing the Catamount Tavern near by, that "Landlord Fay" (father of Dr. Jonas Fay) stepped out and with a gracious bow informed the prisoners

*Mr. Arthur Harris Smythe, of the Ohio Society Sons of the American Revolution, is a great-grandson of Israel Harris, a soldier who was directly in rear of Ethan Allen at this critical moment. He declared most emphatically that the language which the old infidel hero used was of a very different nature from that which has been ascribed to him, being more characteristic of Allen, viz: "Get out of your hole, you d——d old skunk."

Possibly Israel Harris referred to some remarks Allen may have made when he was endeavoring to get Captain De la Place out of bed on that eventful morning.

EARLY BENNINGTON.

that the dinner was then ready, which their officers, confident of gaining the victory, had haughtily ordered by a message sent in the day before. In the same meeting-house the first Legislature of Vermont held its June session, 1778. (John Fassett, Sr., and John Fassett, Jr., were both members). The General Assembly of 1779, also that of 1780, and in some instances successive legislatures met here. On the journal of the General Assembly of 1778, under date of June 5, is the following record: "Voted that the Rev. Mr. Dewey be presented with the compliments of this house to desire him to pray with the assembly at their opening in the morning for this present session.'"

"Captain Samuel Robinson, Sr., and James Fay were, or had been, deacons of the Hardwick church. According to tradition John Fassett (Sr.) was, or had been, deacon, probably of the Hardwick church. Joseph Safford (Sr.), who came here in the summer or fall of 1761, had been deacon of a church in Newint, Conn." The following appeared on the records of the first business meeting of the church: "Chose brethren Joseph Safford, Elisha Field and John Fassett as help to examine into persons' principles who offer to join themselves unto this church, and also to provide preaching."

Jennings, his book being really a history of the church, of which he was pastor for many years, describes at great length why the first settlers of Bennington had come to be Separates. There had been various differences in the old churches in Massachusetts and Connecticut, and as a result the faction withdrawing became known as Separates. Some had even been excommunicated. Jennings says of Deacon John Fassett: "He was a staunch Separate, in principle and feeling, through life." Separatism seems to have had much to do with the emigration to Bennington.

But, in regard to the civil affairs of the first settlers of Bennington, we find this reservation in

their charter (see Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I, p. 145): "All the white and other pine trees fit for masting our Royal Navy." This same reservation appears in the charters of a number of other towns, and was probably a phrase to be inserted in every charter.

The education of the founders of Bennington was, quite naturally, limited. The following is a fair sample of the rhetoric which one often runs across in reading of the doings of that peculiar people. At the first meeting, February 8, 1762, among other things, it was "Voted, that any rattlesnake that is killed in Bennington shall be paid two coppers, the persons bringing in the tail."

Early Bennington is nicely described by Bancroft in Vol. V, p. 291, who quotes a letter of Gov. Hutchinson to Gov. Pownall, July 1765: "Men of New England 'of a superior sort,' had obtained of the government of New Hampshire a warrant for land down the western slope of the Green Mountains, on a branch of the Hoosick, 20 miles east of Hudson River; forming already a community of 67 families, in as many houses, with an ordained minister; had elected their own municipal officers; formed 3 several public schools; set their meeting house among their primeval forests of beech and maple; and in a word, enjoyed the flourishing state which springs from rural industry, intelligence and unaffected piety. They called their village Bennington."

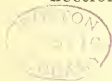
The land title controversy with the State of New York began in 1764, and lasted until 1790. It was extremely unpleasant to the settlers, and its events rank, in the history of the town, second to those of the revolution only. Excitement over the aggressions of the Yorkers ran very high at times and it seems miraculous that blood was not sometimes spilled. The tories and Yorkers within their bounds were kept in constant fear of being hung if caught in acts of disloyalty to Vermont.

EARLY BENNINGTON.

One or two incidents may be mentioned in this connection. The land was divided into counties by New York and sold and resold by officers appointed for each county. There seemed to be no end of writs and trials of ejectment. The Vermonters were in 1774 pronounced a mob by New York, and a reward of fifty pounds a head offered for Ethan Allen, Seth Warner and six others. In 1783 Ethan Allen, at the head of a small force of Green Mountain Boys (in which Joseph Safford was a captain) was sent into Windham county, where he issued this characteristic proclamation: "I, Ethan Allen, declare that unless the people of Guilford peaceably submit to the authority of Vermont, this town shall be made as desolate as were the cities of Sodom and Gomorah," completing his remarks with his usual oath.

On one occasion, a Dr. Adams, a rabid Yorker, and subsequently tory, of Arlington, was brought before the Committee at the Catamount Tavern and tried. Instead of sentencing him to the usual "application of the beech seal," his punishment consisted in being tied in a chair and suspended for two hours under the tavern sign, which was a stuffed catamount, showing his teeth in the direction of New York State.

The men of Bennington had extremely firm and shrewd ideas as to their rights in the matter, and lived up to them with a moral tenacity and physical courage peculiarly their own. Any history of early Vermont will give extensive particulars of this celebrated dispute in which our ancestors, their connections and neighbors played prominent parts.



"Ho! all to the borders, Vermonters come down,
With your breeches of deerskin and jackets of brown,
With your red woolen caps and your moccasins, come
To the gathering summons of trumpet and drum."

A Rev. Mr. Avery, who became pastor of the church after the death of Mr. Dewey, wrote, in 1783, "In regard to military prowess, Bennington is thought to be second to none on the continent." The population is estimated at about fifteen hundred at

the beginning of the war. In the Vermont Historical Magazine is a list of Vermont officers and the number of names from Bennington is surprisingly large. As an instance of the patriotism of the town, we have evidence that the sons in the Fassett, Safford, Robinson, Hopkins and Fay families, with perhaps one or two exceptions in the case of invalids, were all in the military service during the revolution, and that the daughters married the same kind of men.

Thompson's Gazetteer of Vermont says of Bennington: "Here was held the council of Allen, Easton, Warner and others in which the expedition to Ticonderoga was planned in May, 1775, and a considerable portion of the Green Mountain Boys who joined the expedition were from this town." Just who were in this affair does not seem to be known at this time, but we may rest assured that a large per cent of the men who are mentioned in this volume were with either Allen or Warner. This statement is based upon the following extract from the Vermont Historical Magazine, Volume I, p. 154: "The governor of New York, in reporting the Ticonderoga affair used the following words, 'The only people of this province who had any hand in this expedition, were that set of lawless people, whom your Lordship has heard much of, under the name of the Bennington Mob.'"

After the brilliant capture of Ticonderoga and the garrisons on Lake Champlain, came the first expedition to Canada, with all the enthusiasm of a rapid conquest of Canada, then the second expedition to the relief of a defeated and disheartened army, then a campaign of defense against invasion. Then, in 1777, an invasion which struck terror into all the settlements of the New Hampshire Grants. Can we wonder at the inhabitants being terror stricken at the approach of the British and Hessians, after the fall of Ticonderoga, when we read in Williams' History of Vermont, Vol. II, p. 92, of the Hessians, Wal-

deckers and other German auxiliaries, in this army, "Cruelty, pilfering, rape, destruction and plunder, marked their steps and their abode. Wherever they came, neither property, chastity, nor personal apparel seemed to be safe for a moment. Such were their brutal manners, their ferocious tempers, and their habits of plunder and pillage, that they became everywhere hated and avoided. And it yet remains a problem which would have been the greater evil to the Americans, to have fallen into the hands of the Senecas and Mohawks, or into those of the Hessians and Waldeckers. So completely odious were these troops, that the whole country wisely determined to perish in the contest, or to clear their country of the foreign barbarians."

In the Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. I, p. 159, we find: "The five weeks which had followed the evacuation of Ticonderoga, had been to the people of Bennington a period of great anxiety and alarm. * * * When it became known that an army of Hessians and Indians was approaching the town, the people from the borders flocked to the center, as did, also, numbers from other towns. * * * On the day of the battle the old village and its vicinity was crowded with women and children, whose husbands, fathers and brothers had gone out to meet and encounter the enemy. Here the heavy sound of musketry and cannon was plainly heard, furnishing evidence that a deadly conflict was in progress. Any attempt to describe the painful anxiety which, during the long summer day, was felt for the result of the struggle, and for the fate of the dear friends engaged in it, would be fruitless. That, as well as the gush of overflowing joy and exultation which followed the news of the defeat of the enemy, can only be imagined."

Every school boy ought to be familiar with the causes, the incidents, and the amazing results of the battle of Bennington, but none of us know much of the excitement in the town, the anxiety of mothers,

BATTLE OF BENNINGTON.

wives and children, the sufferings of the wounded, or the sorrow in the families of the killed. August 16, 1777, was the most memorable day in the history of the town, and is celebrated each year as a holiday. Jennings gives many personal narratives of the day, and the early histories of Vermont, to be found in our large public libraries only, give exhaustive descriptions of the bloody fight. How the comparatively untrained force of Stark, consisting mostly of the hastily raised militia, in some instances men of Bennington serving without being enlisted in any organization, ever dislodged the fine force of the Hessian veterans from their fortified position on the hill and finally drove back the heavy re-inforcements sent to Baum's assistance, is a problem which seems impossible to solve. Baum was a gallant and efficient officer, and his entire force had been selected by Burgoyne with special care. A careful study of the case would develop the following points in favor of the Americans:

Their spirit, evidenced by the famous exhortation of Stark, who, in his saddle, pointing toward the enemy, said, as the first shots were heard, "There are the red-coats, and they are ours, or this night Molly Stark sleeps a widow."

The condition in which the Americans fought, leaving off their coats and knapsacks, whereas the Hessians wore full dress uniforms and were in heavy marching order.

The fact that the Americans fought like demons, their bravery seeming at times to have no bounds.

The method of fighting by the Americans, who, using cover whenever possible, were enabled to pour such a deadly and accurate fire into the enemy.

The precipitate retreat of the Tories, Canadians and Indians in the early part of the fight.

And last but not least, the prayer meetings that were being held by the old men and the women in Bennington, to invoke the assistance of the Almighty in the effort to stay the invader.

EARLY BENNINGTON.

Gen. Stark, who had been in many fights before, said of the battle: "The hottest I ever saw in my life; it represented one continuous clap of thunder." Bancroft says: "New England sharpshooters ran up within eight yards of the loaded cannon to pick off the cannoniers." A Hessian officer wrote: "The royal officers were astonished to see how undauntedly they rushed on the mouths of the cannon. They rushed up the ascent, sprang over the parapet, and dashed within the works,—bayonet, butt, and rifle in full play." It must be said to the credit of the Hessians that they knew no such thing as defeat. Jennings says of them: "They preserved their discipline and fought bravely until there was not a cartridge left, then drew their sabres and charged the Americans, with their colonel at their head. They were nearly all killed or taken with Colonel Baum, who did not surrender until wounded fatally." "Captain Robinson, who guarded the house where Baum lingered in his last hours and watched gently as a woman with him till he died, was wont to say that 'A more intelligent and brave officer he had never seen than this unfortunate lieutenant.'" The Americans had been completely exhausted after the fight with Baum, and had it not been for the timely arrival of Warner's regiment of continentals under command of Lieutenant Colonel Samuel Safford, they would not have been able to withstand the attack of the reinforcement under Breyman. Bancroft gives the number of prisoners taken as 692, of whom over 400 were Hessians. The care of the hundreds of prisoners, and the wounded, and the burial of the dead was a greater burden than Bennington could bear.

We find the following in regard to those who lost their lives in the battle: "They were all in the prime of life, and all heads of families, leaving widows and children to mourn their sudden bereavement. The grief for their loss was not confined to their immediate relatives, but was general, deep and sincere."

RESULTS OF THE BATTLE.

The school-house, the meeting-house and the barns were so filled with the prisoners that there was danger of breaking them down, and some of the Hessians were turned loose. Not so, however, with the 157 tory prisoners. It did not seem so hard to care for them. "The women," says Jennings, "took down their beds to get ropes" to secure them with.

Bancroft estimates the American loss at 30 killed and 40 wounded, while that of the British was double that amount. General Stark reported the number of dead on the field to be 207.

Burgoyne wrote to England just after the battle: "The Hampshire Grants—a country unpeopled and almost unknown in the last war—now abounds in the most active and rebellious race on the continent, and hangs, like a gathering storm, on my left."

Jennings says that Burgoyne "declared that he should, on his return to England, recommend the recognition of their independence."

The Green Mountain Boys were also on hand at Stillwater on October 7th, doing their full share in giving Burgoyne his final blow, which may be considered the turning point in the war.

Such were the Green Mountain Boys. Will it not be permitted their descendants to take justifiable pride in the deeds of such ancestry?

The Bennington monument, which cost in round figures, one hundred thousand dollars, is a fitting testimonial to the prowess of the American forces at Bennington. It was, like other undertakings of such gigantic proportions, a work of years to pave the way for its erection. The corner-stone was laid August 16, 1887, and the dedication took place August 19, 1891. It is 37 feet square at the base and the height is 306 feet from the corner-stone.





THE BENNINGTON BATTLE MONUMENT.

See page 203.

COPYRIGHT 1895, BY M. E. WATSON, BENNINGTON, VT.

EARLY CAMBRIDGE.

THOMPSON, in his Gazetteer of Vermont, page 43, says: "Cambridge was granted November 7, 1780, chartered to Samuel Robinson, John Fassett, Jr., Jonathan Fassett and their associates, August 13, 1781, and contains 28,533 acres. The town was surveyed 1783 by Amos Fassett. In 1784 Amos Fassett, Stephen Kingsley, John Fassett, Jr., and Samuel Montague moved their families here from Bennington, and Noah Chittenden his from Arlington, Vt. The first saw-mill was built this year by Amos Fassett. Thirty-five persons spent the second winter here. In 1785 David Safford and others moved into town from Bennington. The first settlers brought their provisions with them, and when their meat failed, they hunted the moose. The first improvements were made on the flats along the Lamoille, the waters of which frequently swept away or spoiled in fall the products of summer. The crops of pumpkins frequently floated away and landed safely on the shores of Grand Isle. When their mill dams were swept away the people ground their grain in mortars, which they called plumping mills. They were made by burning a large cavity in the top of a stump, and suspending a large pestle to a spring pole. The town was organized March 29, 1785, and John Fassett was first town clerk. David Safford was first representative and John Safford taught the first school in town."

The Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 59, says: "In the olden time, the citizens of the town were occupied in various things, they cleared land, made potash, whisky, etc.

EARLY CAMBRIDGE.

"The town was granted November 7, 1780, and chartered August 13, 1781, to Samuel Robinson, John Fassett, Jr., Jonathan Fassett and sixty-four others." Amos Fassett was first surveyor.

STATE OF VERMONT,

BENNINGTON, *July 1st, 1783.*

At a meeting of the proprietors of the Township of Cambridge, in the County of Rutland, held at the house of Jonathan Robinson, agreeable to a warning in the Massachusetts Gazette:

First. Chose John Fassett, Jr., Moderator.

Second. Chose Joseph Safford, Clerk.

August 28, 1783, a draught of lots was made. Among those who drew were: John Fassett, 19; John Fassett, Jr., 68; Hannah Fassett, 32; John Fassett (3d), 13; Jonathan Fassett, 49; David Fassett, 3; Nathan Fassett, 25; Benjamin Fassett, 61; Amos Fassett, 17; Elias Fassett, 40; Thomas Chittenden, 24; Noah Chittenden, 55; Martin Chittenden, 65; Salmon Safford, 8; Joseph Safford, 59; Moses Robinson, 63; Samuel Robinson, 20; Leonard Robinson, 26; Moses Robinson, Jr., 37; Jonathan Robinson, 62; Elijah Dewey, 16; minister, 31; college, 29; school, 41; grammar school, 15; minister, 30. At the same time it was voted "to pay Amos Fassett & Co., for viewing said town, four pounds, fourteen shillings and six pence."

At a meeting March 26, 1784, the proprietors "voted that John Fassett and Benjamin Fassett have the privilege of pitching two hundred acres of their undivided land, on condition they have a grist-mill running in said town by the first day of November, 1785. Voted, at the same meeting, to give John Fassett, Amos Fassett and Benjamin Fassett two hundred acres providing they shall have a saw-mill ready to saw by the first of November, 1784, in Cambridge."

"In 1785 the first saw-mill was built, which gave the settlers a chance to cover their houses and have floors and doors." "When the settlers got out of

FIRST SETTLERS.

meat they would kill moose." "Samantha Fassett, daughter of Amos Fassett, was the first child born in town, 1784." "Dr. John Fassett was the first physician that settled in town. He came from Bennington in 1784; remained in town about forty years, and then went to the west." "About 1800, bears came into the fields and killed the only cow of widow Young leaving her destitute of milk for her children. The townsmen contributed enough to buy her another cow."

"In 1786 the first school was kept in a log-house, having 24 scholars, by John Safford. The members of the first district were: John Safford, John Fassett, John Fassett, Jr., Stephen Kingsley, David Safford, Noah Chittenden and Samuel Montague." The John Fassett must have been the John Fassett (1743--1803) and the John Fassett, Jr., at this time was undoubtedly Dr. John Fassett (1769--1853).

"The town was organized March 29, 1785, and John Fassett was appointed the first town clerk and David Safford the first representative." "David Safford was one of the Spartan Band, so called, which defended the premises of James Breckenridge, of Bennington, in 1771, and resisted the execution of process in the hands of the sheriff of Albany county, issued for the purpose of ejecting the settlers on the New Hampshire grants from the use and occupancy of their lands—wherein the first resistance by force was made to the authority of New York."

"John Safford outlived all those who came on about the time he did. He died November 17, 1857, at the advanced age of ninety years, then being the oldest person in town."

"The first grist-mill built in town was by Amos Fassett in 1791, on the Mill river near the Boro, and the people came from Morristown, twenty miles, by marked trees, to mill." Dr. Nathan Fassett came between 1789 and 1800. One man is mentioned "who, with his wife, traveled five miles into the woods on snow shoes to reach their shanty, she carrying a child in her arms."

EARLY CAMBRIDGE.

"The early settlers of the town formed material for a new settlement rarely flung together. With hardly an exception, they were temperate, industrious, able-bodied, intelligent and staunch citizens. As neighbors they were kind-hearted and generous; and as members of society they were high-minded, moral, church-going, liberty-loving people. The spirit of the Revolution, in which very many of them had taken part, was retained by them and never failed to show itself on public occasions."

Under the head of Congregational Church and Society, in a list of the "useful and venerable men who laid the foundation of our social institutions and large prosperity in right and truth, whose memories we love and cherish," we find John Fassett, Amos Fassett, David Safford, John Safford, Noah Chittenden and others. "These were the men who bore the burdens of the early days of this community, erected the church, built the school-houses, supported the minister and the teacher with remarkable liberality," etc.

Diary
of
Captain John Fassett, Jr.
(1743-1803)

WHEN A FIRST LIEUTENANT OF
"GREEN MOUNTAIN BOYS."

September 1, to December 7,

1775

Transcribed from the Original
by
Mrs. Morris L. Riggs, Toledo, Ohio.

Montreal. It is a very fine ⁵⁵
City with a wall all Round it
& a trench without the wall from
the Bottom of the trench to the top
of the wall is about 15 foot the wall
is about 2 foot thick the City is
about 2 mile Long But it is ~~very~~
Narrow perhaps 80. or 100 Rods
wide I eat a peer in the City al-
most Every thing to be sold at the
market it is a very Rich City
7 Clock at night Been going about
the City again See Strange things
See George the third, Effigy made of
white marble the most Curious thing
that ever my Eyes beheld; we Drank
some porter and went Back half a mile
out of the City to our Lodging Set up
something to eat and told Stories
15th Nov^r Got up Early the ground
is Covered with Snow. had word that
it is in general order for Every
man to be Ready at 10 Clock for
a march to Quebeck that we were to
go in Bark Canoes and that the whole
army was to follow after in ^{with} Bottom

· Diary of Lieutenant John Fassett during trip to Canada and return in Captain Hopkins' company of Colonel Warner's regiment, under General Montgomery, from September 1st to December 7th, 1775.

1st Sept., 1775. I went from Bennington (to go into the war) with Major Safford, Adj't Walbridge, and Serj't Major Hutchens and some others (and Capt. Hopkins with the company went two days before); we went as far as Landlord French's, Manchester, 23 miles.

2d Sept. Went on our march to Col. Seth Warner's, Rupert, 12 miles. Staid there till 3d September. Proceeded on our march as far as Skeenborough. Lodged at Landlord Gordon's, 30 miles. We sent our horses back.

Sept. 4. Went down the Lake Champlain to Ticondaroga 28 miles.

5th Sept. Doct. Jacob Meak was buried under arms. He died the day before.

6th Sept. Major Safford, Capt. Hopkins, Adjutant Walbridge and I went to Lake George afoot, about 3 miles, to carry a letter and Drink some Toddy which was the best I Drink'd after I went from home. Went back to Ticondaroga the same Day.

7th Sept. Went down the Lake Champlain with a fine gaile of wind to Crown Point, 15 miles. Arrived there about sun-set.

8th, 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th. Staid at Crownpoint. Nothing Extraordinary. We Viewed the Ruins of the Fort which is Remarkable.

12th Sept. At night after Day Light was gone, Set out with a fine gale of wind from Crownpoint and went with 5 Battoos and one Canoe. Went 12 miles that night to a small Island called Butten Bay, where we had nothing but the Heavens to cover us. I lay

down after we struck up a fire, on a Flat rock and slept very well. Two of our Boates went by us about a mile to Bason Harbor.

13th Sept. Set out early in the morning. Came up with the two Boates. We had to row as there was no wind the chief of the forenoon. Went on shore at one Mr. Person's of Shelburn. About noon got a dinner of chocolate & cakes, then set out with a fine wind and landed at night East of the great Bay north of where Onion River Empty's into the Lake 30 miles. We built fires and pitched some Tents. It Rained hard but I slept Tollerable well, but Began to think it was not home.

14th Sept. We set out something late in the morning, by reason of the wind being high. The wind held high all Day, but after noon the wind increased, the waves ran High and Boisterous. It made me think of the Anthem (they that go Down to the Sea in Ships). The wind increased and we were afraid of being Lost, and could not land. At length we put in to a small Island 30 miles I know no name to but shall call it Cherry Island for the abundance of the cherries there was there. We landed about three o'clock in the afternoon. Staid all night.

15th Sept. Staid to a Frenchman's house, where pitched our tents. I was officer of the Guard at night. I paid my Bottle of Rum for that was the first time I mounted guard. We expected we were in great danger of the Enemy but Received no harm. Went about 40 miles that Day.

16th Sept. Set sail before Day Light appeared, for fear of an attack. Went about 7 miles to where Remember Baker was Buried. Went two miles farther to the Island Ore where the main army was. We met Gen. Skylar in sight of the Island, for he had set out for Ticondaroga, for he was sick. We got there about 10 o'clock in the morning. Went into a Barn where I saw Serj't Yu Cobb lying on a sort of Bed, for he was wounded. I was glad to see him as ever I was in my life, but sorry to see him in that situation. We left Ezekiel Brewster, Benj'in Holmes and Simeon Covel sick with five of our company.

UNDER FIRE.

17th Sept. Sunday, Col. Warner's Reg't set out for to take the Brestwork, 12 miles from the Island Ore, where Serg't Cobb was wounded, and the company he was in was defeated. We arrived at the Brest work before night and found no Molestation, tho' we expected a battle as much as we expected to get there. The whole army soon came up where we all staid that night and had nothing to cover us but the heavens and it was very cold and they flung Boms among us and we had a very tedious night of it indeed.

18th Sept. In the morning our army fired their cannon and they fired from the fort. There was a hot fire from both sides sometime, but in the midst of it Col. Warner's Regiment was ordered to march about three miles thro' the wood around St. Johns. We had to travel knee deep in water expecting every minute to meet with the enemy. We at length came very near to Major Brown's encampment, where the Regulars were. They gave us a hot fire. The grape shot and Musket balls flew very thick, but our pilots, not knowing the ground, we had not an equal chance for they all fled to St. Johns. They wounded Capt. Watson, but killed none of our men. We took the ground and staid there all night and had a very tedious night with our feet wet and cold, no houses nor tents to lie in.

Sept. 19th. The next day we went to intrenching and followed it for Some Days, and built a very good Breastwork.

20th, 21st Sept. Nothing Remarkable.

22nd Sept. Capt'n Hopkins with the biggest part of the company and also Col. Warner and the biggest part of his Regiment went from our Encampment to Laprairie. Left me with the rest of the company. Nothing Remarkable.

23d Sept. Nothing Remarkable for a week except that we expected every day and hour to have a battle. Heard every day that the Enemy was coming upon us. Sometimes we had news at midnight that the Enemy was close by; then would be every man to

his armes, then we must run to our Station at the Breastwork and stay there till further orders which would be an hour or two sometimes. We had to lie in the Barn as many as could get in. We kept some in houses and some out doors. We had a very tedious week of it for it was very wet and cold.

30th Sept. Col. Bedel sent me with a Frenchman down the river Surrell to buy shoes and stockings for the army. I went about 45 miles. Bought 133 p'r stockings and 71 p'r shoes. I was treated the Best I ever was in my Life with what wine I could drink and with what victuals I could eat. The best they had in their houses was at my Pleasure. They carried me in a calash from place to place. No man could be used better than I was, but the man that went with me could not talk English, that I was put to it sometimes to understand them, but the French are very Civil and Polite.

4th Oct. 11 o'clock at night returned to Col. Bedel's Encampment. Was fatigued with my journey and not very well and when I came to my tent found Lieut. Noble and his waiter. He informed me that Col. Warner had sent for the rest of his Regiment and that they were all gone to Laprairie except those that were sick and Lieut. Noble staid to take care of them and my waiter was gone with them.

5th Oct. Col. Bedel sent me to Gen. Montgomery with a guard of 20 men to carry the shoes and stockings I had Bo't. I went to the Gen's Markey. He said he never was so glad to see anything in his life as he was the shoes and stockings, but when we counted them out there was 9 p'r of stockings and 3 p'r shoes missing. He asked how that should happen and why I was not more careful. I told him the circumstances. He told me to come to him next morning, and he would settle with me for the shoes and stockings. I went that night to Dr. Fay's camp where was Capt'n Herrick and Doct'r Nathan Fassett, Josiah Fay and Sundry others of my friends I had not seen for some time. I was very glad to see them. Nathan and I went into one of the boats to

SUFFERS FROM FLUX.

get out of the way of people and talked about two hours till I was almost chilled to death with the cold, for I had waded knee deep in water and had no dry stockings to put on. At length we went into the tent and lay down and I slept very well.

6th Oct. Next morning I grew more ill, but eat pretty hearty, but the Bloody Flux took me very hard for I had had the Quickstep for some time before. I went to the General's tent, and he paid me the money for the shoes and stockings and thanked me for what I had done for my Country. He said he believed I had done as well as any man could and he did not think I was to blame by the stockings and shoes being lost, but should be glad if I would try and find them, and before I got back I found 1 p'r stockings in a man's pocket that went with me that was one of the Guard that carried part of the stockings. I went on towards Col. Bedel's camp, but grew poorly so fast that I thought I never should get there. We went very slow. The men that were with me had some wine with them and they gave me some to drink 2 or 3 times, which helped me much. They seemed to pity me very much. We sat down a great many times. I did not think of home much because I would not. At length we arrived at Col. Bedel's camp. I told him my misfortune in losing the stockings and shoes, and that I had found one p'r stockings. He advised me to put the man under guard immediately, which I did. I grew worse. Had a search for the stockings but could not find any more. That night I could not sleep. Had to go out doors every few minutes. Was in great pain.

7th Oct. Had a Court martial upon the man I put under guard and they freed him because he proved to their satisfaction that he forgot to pull them out of his pocket. I grew more and more sick and that day went to the tavern and got in there for a few days. The Innkeeper was a Scotchman. He and his wife were very kind to me. Indeed I could not have expected more from my own Father, Only as their victuals were not cooked to suit me, for my stomach was very weak.

DIARY OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

8th Oct. Sunday. No better. Nothing extraordinary except that our people kept on the firing as well as the enemy, every day more or less after we took the breast work that I mentioned the 17th Sept. Every day they fired from both sides with their cannon and bomb shell more or less.

9th Oct. Some better, but yet in great distress at times. Eight of our men went from Col. Bedel's Camp to the General's, was ambushed by a party of the Enemy who fired upon them, wounded the Serg't of the party and took two of our men prisoners. They bro't the wounded man in where I was, and upon search found the ball to be in his Leg. The Surgeon cut a great while but could not get it out. That made me think that I ought to be thankful that I was not in such a condition.

10th, 11th, 12th Oct. I grew better but very slow. Was in great pain all the time when I used the stool and was very weak, but went about some every day. Col. Warner came to see me, and he said I must go to Laprairie with him. He said they wanted me there and I must go. He urged so hard I set out with him but did not expect to get there that night for it was dark when we set out, and we had eighteen miles to go. I rid on a low horse and it was very wet and muddy and we rid very hard that my feet were as wet as if I had waded knee-deep in water. We got to Laprairie Between nine and ten o'clock at night. I was very much worn out, but was glad to see my friends, for I had not seen them for three weeks. Major Safford informed us that there was an army of 500 men Coming upon us that night. We had to lie on our arms that night.

13th Oct. Was called up a four o'clock in ye morning by the beat of the drum, but no Enemy came upon us all this time. I had no stummick to eat. I Bo't as many apples as I could eat, some 3 and some 4 for a copper. I had one apple pie and that tasted good. We had a court martial on John Twohy, the mitemus that was brought against him was for not doing his Duty. I was one of the members of the

MEMBER OF COURT-MARTIAL.

court, and our Judgment was that Twohy should be stripped naked and tied to a post for five minutes, and then be released. He was Bro't to the post and the Col. set him at Liberty without having his punishment.

14th Oct. Nothing Extraordinary. Some better.

15th Oct. Went to Mass in the forenoon. I see the strangest thing that ever I see in my life. Their Ceremonies are beyond what I can express. They had six candles burning all the time. Held a counsel of war. Resolved to go to Longail which was nine miles, with all the men we had at Laprairie except Capt'n McCracken's Company for we heard the Regulars and Canadians were going there to take it, and we see a number of boats going that way. Major Safford was not well that he could not go. I was very weak yet, but I set out with the company. I held out very well about seven miles, and then we had word we must all run for the Enemy had all landed about three miles below Longail. They all set out to run, but I could not run, but I put on too fast for my strength. We all flung off our packs but put a Centry over them. I was soon left behind so that I was alone and went in alone, but before I got in I heard the guns fire brisk. I expected to have a hot battle when I got to the fort. Every man was gone forward. I went into a house and sat down. The people of the house were going to supper. They asked me to sit down with them. I ate a few mouthfuls of hot soup. While I was at supper seven or eight yorkers came in that were behind me. I ordered a guard immediately. Our men all came back pretty soon. It was my turn to be officer of the guard that night and the Adjutant told me I must take it. I got Serg't Major Hutchens to take my place. Was very glad to get freed from my Duty that night. Capt. Hopkins and I went to a Frenchman's house and got a lodging in a good bed. I slept very well.

16th Oct. Got up early in the morning. Felt better. Nothing Remarkable.

DIARY OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

17th Oct. Sent out a scout of 60 men. They went down the River 18 miles and had a battle about twelve o'clock at night. William Draper was killed down dead on the Spot. We had one more man wounded in the thigh and we killed the Capt. of the Enemy and sundry others, but how many we could not tell, for they fled to their boats and our men followed them and had had all the advantage upon them Imaginable for they were close to them. About 7 o'clock at night word came to Capt. Hopkins and I that Col. Brush was at Col. Warner's lodging which was about 20 or 30 Rods from our lodging. We went very quick to see him. I was very glad to see him indeed. He Bro't me two letters from my wife. I was exceeding glad to hear that my family and friends were all well. We staid with him until late in the night, then Returned to our Lodging. Sleep well, by this time I had got hearty and well.

18th Oct. Yesterday scout returned and Bro't the above Intelligence concerning the Battle. Seven Boats came down the river and made as if they were going to land on a point of an island or come across the river to us. A number of our officers went out towards the boats, and the Regulars from the boats fired their field pieces at us. The Balls and Grape Shot flew over our heads, but did us no harm. They shot two or three cannon balls thro' the roofs of some of the houses. Our men fired several small arms at them. Their Balls scooted along by their boats, some of them. I was officer of the Guard that night. Nothing Remarkable.

19th Oct. Nothing more than common.

20th Oct. A very rainy day.

21st Oct. Rainy yet. Wrote letters to send to my wife and friends by Col. Brush.

22nd Oct. Sunday, went in the morning to see a man stript and tied to the post for neglecting his duty. The regiment was all paraded, the man was brought and the Col. forgave him upon the Capt'n's Bail. Went to mass with Col. Warner, Col. Brush, Major Safford, Adjutant Walbridge and sundry

SNOW. EXCITING NEWS.

others in the forenoon. In the afternoon Col. Brush, with his brother, Wm. Brush, set out in a Calash for home. Capt'n Hopkins accompanied them as far as the general Brestwork south St. John's.

23d Oct. Nothing more than common. Well and hearty, but nothing to do. Chose Sinion Graves sergeant.

24th Oct. Nothing extra. Got out of Bread and Meal so that we had to live upon dumplings. The Sentry just shot his gun at something he can't tell what. It is bed time, all are gone to bed but I. Flour came plenty.

25th Oct. Fair weather. Snow appeared on the mountain by Montreal. We had thickened milk for breakfast, and I don't see as ever they will be done. 7 o'clock at night Lieut. Gallusha, Lieut. Roberts and sundry others come to my lodging after me to go to the Adjutant's lodging. Went with them. Col. Warner and Chief of the Officers belonging to his regiment and some of the York officers were there. We stayed there and drank some wine and sung songs till half after 11 o'clock at night when the Col. heard he had an express come to his lodging. We all went immediately to see what it was, and found it to be a letter from Capt'n Grant that was with a party of about ten men at Variene about 12 miles down the river below us which was to this import, that about 20 miles below him there were seen 300 Regulars marching towards him as fast as they could and there was a ship of 500 tons with a number of cannons in her with about 300 more of the King's Troops and 4 or 500 Canadians all coming to give us battle. We concluded to send two men to see what more discovery they could make. Then we all went to our quarters. Now I am going to bed.

26th Oct. Concluded to send one Capt'n with sixty men down the river as an advance guard to see what further discovery they could make. About 11 o'clock forenoon four Battoes about 10 or 12 men in each came down the river from Montreal by us. They fired their swivels at us and small arms. Our

men fired from ye shore at them. No harm on either side as I know of. Battoes went down 2 or 3 miles, then went back on the other side of the river. About 2 o'clock afternoon, 15 or 16 boats came down the river by us. They fired at us and we at them, nothing but small arms. They went down about a mile and a half below us, then turned about and came directly back. As they passed by us, they fired very brisk, and our people on them, but no harm till they had got by the town. Some of our men followed them by and Serg't Jackson of Capt'n Potter's Company run onto a point of land within about 25 or 30 Rods of the Battoes, and fired at them and they discharged a number of guns at him. He said the balls flew around him as thick as hailstones. One ball went through his arm and gave him a flesh wound but did no other harm. Our men picked up a number of balls that fell where they stood. Some of ye balls went over our heads, some struck the ground by our feet. I don't think they were less than 100 rods from us when we first see them. I some expected they had laid a deep plot against us, but at present we kept peaceable and it is now about 9 o'clock at night. This afternoon 12 Sub.'s of us have held a council and have carried a petition to the Col. tonight to send for some cannon. He said he would give us an answer tomorrow morning as early as we pleased. 10 o'clock at night Col. Warner, Major Safford and all the Capt'ns sent for us to consult us. We went to see them. They approved of what we had done. We all consulted together and concluded to send Major Safford, and Capt'n Teneyck to Chamblee for cannon and if they could not get any there to go till they could get some. We all went to our lodging.

27th Oct. At 2 o'clock in the morning some of our folks that lodged in the same house with me, said they heard guns which partly awaked me, then one or two jumped up and said "stand to your arms" and I sprang up expecting nothing but that the enemy was come. We dressed ourselves and got our guns immediately and ran to the fort which was about 50

A MIDNIGHT SCARE.

rods but when we came to the guard he said he had heard nothing. So we all returned to our Quarters again. Very fine weather. Nothing extra. David Brewster is very sick. Sent for Col. Warner and he gave him a portion of Jallap. Jacob Safford not very well, nor has not been for several days.

28th Oct. Cloudy, raw, cold weather. Looks like snow. Capt'n Hopkins came from ye General's Breastwork. Bro't news that they had not taken St. Johns, that Gen. Worcester was come to Gen. Montgomery's encampment with 300 men and that he was coming on to us, and that Major Safford was like to get some cannon. All which gave us some encouragement. Christie is making up my Plush breeches at last.

Sunday 29th Oct. Col. Warner blooded Jacob Safford. David Brewster is some better. Col. Warner is going to Laprairie; the weather is warmer than it was yesterday but is cloudy yet. 10 o'clock in the morning Major Safford came back. Bro't news that there was one four pounder coming from Chamblee, and that the main army had struck their tents yesterday and had moved one mile and a half north St. Johns to where Col. Bedel commanded, that they had pitched their tents there, and that Col. Easton with his regiment had gone down the river towards Surrell to drive off the enemy that were fortifying there. Doct. Fay went with Col. Easton. Doct. Fassett staid with the main army to take care of the sick. Capt'n Herrick and Lieut. Spencer is sick. Major Safford says that the officers think in general that St. Johns will be taken in 4 or 5 days; Lieut. Noble came to us with the invalids at 9 o'clock. They bro't the cannon above mentioned to us.

30th Oct. A pleasant morning, but afternoon grew very cold. Very early came a spy boat down to see our motion. Between 11 and 12 o'clock there appeared (as near as we could tell) 34 boats from Montreal coming Down towards us, then every man to his arms. We all paraded. There were about 200 of us that were fit for duty. We drewed the cannon to

the water side and a Number of us went by the side of the carriage so as to keep it undiscovered from the schooner that lay off against us. We got the cannon to the water side. Thirty or forty men were ordered up the River to watch the motions of the Boat, for it seemed by their Motion they were going to land about 2 miles above us. In a few minutes a number more men were ordered up the River. Capt'n Hopkins' company was ordered up the River. We went as fast as we could about two miles. The Boat was trying to land, but we fired so brisk upon them they were forced to Retreat. By this time the Biggest part of our army was come up. There were enough left to manage the cannon. There is an Island about 2 miles above Longail fort where part of the Enemy landed and it is very shoal water so that a man may wade very well across the River to where we were, but it is about 1 mile across. There are some little Islands and some large rocks in the River. The Enemy got out of their Boat and Began to wade across towards us. Our men were all ordered along the shore, a number to run and meet the Enemy that were coming across the River some half mile Below where the Boats were trying to land. The Bank of the River favored us for it is higher at the edge of the River than it is a little back, which made a very good breastwork where we lay Behind; and where the Bank of the River did not favor us in that line we got behind the pines. Before many of us got to the place, some of the Enemy got almost to our shore, and 2 Indians got across. David Mallery ran after one of them and took him with his gun loaded. The other our men took after dark. But to return, we kept a perpetual firing on both sides. The Enemy had cannon and Bomb Shells aboard, which they gave us a plenty of. There was one shell broke within a few feet of my head right over me. The pieces flew all around me and there were men lying very thick around me, but none received any harm. Several Cannon Ball came very near me and the Musket balls came close to our heads in great plenty.

BATTLE AT LONGUIEL.

This was the first time I ever shot at a man. There was a very steady firing on both sides all the afternoon till after dark, but no more landed on our side of the River, but they came within gunshot and got behind the Rocks and little Islands. When the Enemy perceived that they could not Land by wading, they sent a number of Boats down against the fort (thinking we were all drawn off from the Fort) where our Cannon gave them a salute. The boats returned when they perceived that, for they did not know we had any cannon. Then the men drew the Cannon up the river after them. All this while the Enemy were trying to land by wading across and there was a continual fire. We saw numbers fall down and some never got up again. When our Cannon came up we gave them a few cannon Balls which drove off the Boats back to Montreal. Then our men threw the grape shot on to the little Islands which drove them off. By this time it had begun to be dark. Then we hailed the Enemy (for there were some within 30 rods) and told them that if they would come ashore to us they could have good quarter, there were 3 behind one rock that said they would. We waited for them sometime. Then we called again. They said they had a wounded man they could not bring. Col. Warner told them to leave him and come ashore and if they offered to run back, or if they fired a gun, Death was their portion. Then we see one stepping off the other way Col. Warner ordered us to fire. The gun cracked merrily at him. He fell down and crawled off, but whether we hit him I don't know. Then one of them came ashore to us which was a gentleman from Montreal. His father is one of the richest men in Montreal. Then a number of our men went in after the wounded man which was an Indian. He died soon after he came ashore. They took one other frenchman prisoner in the water. We found 2 more dead indians that night which we brought ashore and five guns with some other plunder. All the while the firing lasted there was a great number of men and women standing on the Bank on the other

side of the River looking to see how the battle went on, and for all we had such a long and brisk firing, not one of us was hurt except Capt'n Hopkins who had a ball shot thro' his coat sleeve and thro' his shirt and it took off a piece of skin from his arm as big as a York shilling but did him no other harm. The Balls flew around on all sides of us close to our heads and feet yet God suffered them not to hurt us. Oh that I might never forget his goodness to me. I come very near being killed by one of our own men. I had got my gun charged and was lying flat on my belly as all the rest were and was going to get up to see if I could see anybody to shoot at when one spoke and said: "There is a man running, shoot him!" I put my head a little higher when all at once our men fired very brisk and one that was behind me fired his gun over my head so that it seemed to shake my head, and Capt'n Stanton that was close behind me said that he expected I was killed. He said it did not go more than one inch from my head the whole charge, but it did not hurt me. Shot 13 times this afternoon. We all returned to our Quarters except what we left to keep guard. I had not eaten anything after breakfast. I was so tired I could not sleep much that night.

31st Oct. Early in the morning the Col. examined the two French prisoners and they informed us that Gov. Carleton headed the army the day before, and that the army consisted of 660 men, that 100 were Regulars, and the rest Canadians and a few Indians. They said we killed 12 men in the first Boat that tried to land. They said they believed we killed 9 others and wounded about 50 men. We sent off the four prisoners to the General. I went with Lieut. Galusha and Mr. Sunderland to see yt. The 3 Indians were buried when we got there. Canadians were digging a grave for them. They dug it about 2 ft. and a half deep, then put them in stark naked with their faces downward, two at the bottom with their heads both one way, the other on top with his head at the others feet. Then they flung on dirt and then stones. 'Twas

A SPY TAKEN.

such a funeral as I never saw before. Nothing extra, it is very cold. Bells tolled in Montreal this morning. Seven Boats went down the River. The schooner that lay against us went down the river about a mile and a half last night. The prisoners that we took yesterday said that Gen. Carleton's intentions were to land on our side of the River at all events. As a number were to wade and the rest to come with their boats.

1st Nov. A great day among the French, it being All Saints Day. There was a great gathering among them and greater ceremonies at church than common. Fair weather. Nothing Remarkable. Confined a man that we suspected for an Enemy for he was overheard speaking to one of his friends in private that he knew before hand that Gov. Carleton was coming with his army to give us battle as above and that he would not put up with the above battle, but that he would come with all his strength in two or three days. This man told his friend, that he went to Montreal every night to carry news. All this time this man pretended the greatest friendship to us, but we secured him. By the above intelligence and by other news (for we had a great deal) the Col. thought proper to send a strong guard of 36 men up the river where we had the late battle. Capt'n Potter and I slept none so went with them. The Col. sent a guard of 10 or 12 men down the river to watch their motions. Nothing extra, a very cold night.

2nd Nov. I must say I expected a battle this morning as soon as it was light, but it passed over so that at sunrise, we all went to our Quarters. We hear all the time and from all parts that we may expect a battle every day and hour which made us look out sharp. A party went and made a sort of breast work where we had the battle, so as to stand a better chance if they should come again. A little before night they all went back to their Quarters. Just before they went away about 50 of the Enemy was seen to land on the Island over against them and gave them a few shots, but our men made them no

answer. The schooner that had sailed down the river that I mentioned before sailed up about sundown. Our cannon fired upon her 5 or 6 times. She fired upon us 3 times but did no harm. One ball went thro' the roof of a church over my head. We did no damage to the schooner as I know of.

3d Nov. Had news that St. Johns was taken and that Gen. Montgomery had sent to Laprairie to Major Livingston to send him 100 teams, to bring the army along to La prairie which news was of the greatest rejoicing to us. Between 1 and 2 o'clock Col. Warner had a letter from Gen. Montgomery the substance of which was that St. Johns surrendered last night and that he was coming to Laprairie immediately with his forces and a fine trail of artillery which caused a great rejoicing in our regiment and among the Canadians. Rain this afternoon. A little before sunset we were all called together and all paraded by the bank of the river in single file and all faced the river our guns loaded with powder only. The cannon was at our right wing. Then the cannon fired, then we were all ordered to fire, which made a terrible crashing. The cannon was fired three times. All of which was upon the occasion of the Reduction of St. Johns. After dark it snowed, and was a very tedious night for the Sentries. I am just come from a Council held concerning Doct'r Stoddard who had got in to be head doctor of our regiment and we concluded to dismiss him. It is now 10 o'clock at night and all have been gone to bed this hour but I.

4th Nov. Came a spy boat. We gave her several Cannon but did her no harm. The snow covered the ground this morning but all gone before night. Ten o'clock had to take the main guard. Nothing Extra. Wrote a letter to Nathan. Sent it by Serg't Major Hutchins. After dark Lieut. Claghorn sent a prisoner to the Guard house. His crime was he shot 6 times at the sentinel and swore he would be the death of the Officer of the Scout which was Lieut. Claghorn and offered other abuse. He was the worse for liquor. Had a good guard. Slept none.

FALL OF ST JOHNS.

5th Nov. Sunday. Heard from St. Johns that Gen. Montgomery took 550 men, 100 women, 150 children, (About 30 of the men were Canadian Tories), and about 2000 arms a great number of cannon and cannon ball not much powder and no provision. We hear our army is pushing forward for Montreal and we hear from Col. Easton that he has had 2 battles and has drove the enemy both times. We hear from Quebec that Col. Arnold has taken two certain points, which news gave us great encouragement.

6th Nov. Nothing Extra. One sloop, and one Pereyaugre sailed up the river. We gave her several guns but did her no harm. A rainy afternoon. Heard that Montreal had sent a flag of truce to Gen. Montgomery, for what we dont know. At 10 o'clock at night our guard heard a very brisk firing of guns as if they had a battle, but what it was we dont know.

7th Nov. Pleasant morning. Heard that Col. Easton had orders to go to Montreal, that they had driven the enemy off from Surrell. Col. Warner is going to the Gen. this morning. We hear the Biggest part of our army has come to Laprairie, that they had to live in tents. We had word this afternoon from the Gen. that we must be ready in an hour's warning, which makes us expect that we must go to Montreal soon. Capt'n Hopkins cut Lieut. Noble's coat even to the buttocks. Just ate some bread and milk and am going to Capt'n Potters to hold a council, upon Dr. Stoddard. Came home between 11 and 12 o'clock at night. Nothing Extra.

8th Nov. Heard Cannon very brisk as soon as the daylight appeared down the river. We expected it is Col. Easton firing at the shipping at Surrell. It is a very pleasant day. Had roast Turkey for breakfast. Major Safford, Capt'n and I went to Bushavie, afoot, about 6 miles, where we were treated extra well. We had a dinner of very fine soup, then beef and carrots, cabbage and green lettuce as good as any ever I eat any time of the year. Then a mince pie such as I never eat. I did not like it right well. We had what wine we could drink. We stayed 4 hours,

then set out for home. Shot at a mark 4 or 5 times. Got back before dark. We bought 12 blankets and 12 pr. shoes. Got some lettuce seed, onion seed and carrot seed at Bushavie, a sort of lettuce that heads like Cabbage.

9th of Nov. Cloudy but warm. Nothing extra. Nine o'clock heard from Col. Easton that yesterday morning he fired upon the King's shipping at Surrell. He fired so brisk that they were obliged to cut their cables, and pass off down the River. They had a very brisk fire for some hours with Cannon and small arms, but I have not heard the circumstances. Afternoon I received a letter from Doct'r Fassett. He informed me that he had heard from Pittsford that Jonathan Fassett's wife and his wife had got each of them a boy, that they were all well. Nathan informs me that he was ordered to Crown Point the 7th inst. with the sick, but since I heard it contradicted. Heard there were five pieces of Cannon come to Laprairie, that they were bringing 30 Battoes by land to Laprairie.

10th Nov. The ground is covered with snow this morning. It keeps on snowing but it melts as fast as it falls. We expect every hour when we shall be sent for by the General to make a push for Montreal for he has sent to Col. Warner to be ready for a march at a minute's warning. Afternoon heard that Col. Easton determined to keep the ground at Surrell, and that Major Brown with about 200 men had crossed the river St. Lawrence and was coming up the other side towards Montreal. Heard that Gen. Montgomery had got 8 pieces of cannon, one of which was a 24 pounder and that some of the Battoes were come to the General at Laprairie which makes us expect every hour when we shall be sent for. A very snowy day. Heard that Serg't Clark is coming back from Surrell sick in a Calash.

11th Nov. 4 o'clock in the morning Major Safford came to our lodging and told us the Gen. had sent to have us march immediately down the River

CAMPAIGNING IN SNOW AND MUD.

about 3 miles and there to cross. We got up and made ready for our march. Ate breakfast as soon as it was light. It snowed all last night and this morning. About nine o'clock got ready to march. It was very cold and wet and muddy travelling. We got down about 3 miles, and there was but a few canoes, and we thought we saw people on the other side, so we expected a battle as soon as we crossed, or rather, before we could cross. We went into the houses to warm us. In the meantime Col. Warner had an express from the General, if he had not crossed the river to come to Laprairie. We turned our course immediately, went back to Laprairie where we arrived before dark. I was so beat out could hardly help myself, and could get no victuals to eat. At length lit of a French woman that had a Turkey pie to sell. I bought it and gave 20 coppers for it. Major Brown and Capt'n Cockran came to Laprairie after dark from Surrell. Brought news that they had driven the enemy from that Quarter and cleared the River of their water craft. That none of our people had crossed the river as we heard. They informed us that they had taken several packets from the Enemy, that informed that Col. Arnold had arrived near Quebec with 1500 men and had taken 1 or 2 fortresses of importance, and by what they could learn by the packets, Montreal would not fire a gun. Gen. Montgomery with about 300 men has landed on an Island about 3 miles of Montreal. The whole army is to go as fast as they can. Capt'n Cockran told me that Doct'r Fay (some days before he came away) set out for St. Johns, but he thought he had got back to Surrell before now. He said he had gone for medicine. Heard Corporal Hall is very sick at Surrell and that Serg't Clark is better and is coming on to join us.

12th Nov. Sunday. Got up before day and went down to the river to wash. Went to a Dutchman's house to get a dram soon after light where were a number of Yorkers of the First Battalion, cursing and swearing and damning themselves and one

another. It seemed like a hell upon earth. Fair weather but cold. We expect in a few hours to go to the Gen. It is tedious for the men, but I hope we shall get thro' with the business soon, so as to dismiss the men. 12 o'clock E. Smith, Jacob Safford and I have been buying an apple pie and a sort of a floured short cake and apples. Have eaten as much as we can which makes us feel well. This morning a Lieut. of the First Battallion of the New Yorkers died. Is to be buried to-day. His name is McDougal. Capt'n Bronson is not well today. Am afraid he is going to be sick. 2 o'clock afternoon Capt. Grant arrived here from Vershire. Bro't news that the shipping that was at Montreal was 6 miles below Longail and that he see them going down, and that he see the boats go from the Island, that Gen. Montgomery landed on yesterday, to Montreal and he see the army land and walk up into the town, so that we now conclude that the war is all over for this fall, for them that intend to go home this fall. 5 o'clock afternoon. Just returned from the Funeral of the above Lieut. He was buried under arms. He had a brother to see him buried. His father is head Col. of the Regiment but is not here. When I was at the funeral received a letter from brother Johnathan Fassett dated the twenty sixth of October which informed me that he had a son 3 days old and that Nathan had a son a month old. Very windy. Cannot cross to Montreal.

13th Nov. Very windy yet. Froze hard last night. We now have orders to return back to Longail where we expect to cross to Montreal. We shall go in a few hours I expect. Set out from La-prairie about 9 o'clock in the morning. Went down the River about 7 miles afoot. Got there about 2 o'clock. Here we are shooting at a mark. Expect to go over the River in a few minutes. 3 Boats are over and are coming back. Got over the river just before daylight was gone. Went about a mile by land. Came to a tavern where we ate supper of eggs, drinked what cider I could. We are within $\frac{1}{2}$ mile

THE ARMY ENTERS MONTREAL.

of Montreal. Some say small pox is very thick in the city and some say it is not in the city at all.

14th Nov. Am not at the Scotch Tavern that I mentioned last night and just going to Breakfast. As pleasant a day as we have had since we came from home. 10 o'clock Capt'n Bronson, Adjutant Walbridge and I with some others went all around the city of Montreal. It is a very fine City with a wall all Round it & a trench without the wall from the Bottom of the trench to the top of the wall is about 15 foot the wall is about 2 foot thick the City is about 2 mile Long But it is Narrow perhaps 80 or 100 Rod wide I Eat a pear in the City almost Every thing to Be Sold at the market it is a very Rich City 7 o'clock at night Been going about the City again See Strange things See George the Third, Effigy made of white marble the most Curious thing that ever my Eyes Beheld; we Drinkd Some porter and went Back half a mile out of the City to our Lodging Set up Something Late and told Stories.

15th Nov. Got up. Early the ground is Covered with Snow. had word that it is in general order for Every man to Be Ready at 10 o'clock for a march to Quebeck That we were to go in Bark Canoes and the whole army was to follow after in Battoes with the Cannon and that we were to take the shipping that sailed out of this harbor, which lay about 12 leagues below us and it being a very snowy morning, our men looked down. Some talked one thing, some another. Some said we could go well enough and some said we should suffer if we went, and upon the whole I expected that they would raise a mutiny. Everything was in confusion. For my part I was very sober to see the confusion we were like to come into. After a while new orders came out that we must be ready to march at 12 o'clock. One Officer was running here, another there to get in readiness. The men chiefly laid still, and I believe by the motion of things, determined not to go. 11 o'clock fore-noon. Word came that all Officers as low as captains to meet Gen. Montgomery at his quarters at eleven

DIARY OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

o'clock. At 12 o'clock they set off to see him. They are now gone. What will be the event. I know not. Snows very hard and has all day, and looks very tedious, though the snow melts almost as fast as it comes. A snowy night.

16th Nov. Fair weather but cold. Snow over shoes but melts away. 8 o'clock Col. Warner's Regiment all Paraded. The Col. proposed for all that were a mind to go to Quebec, to follow him, and First the Capt'ns. Capt'n Hopkins followed the Col. then the sub-Lieut. Galusha and Lieut. Smith followed. Then Capt'n Hopkins tried to see if any men would go with him. 3 followed. Lieutenant Galusha tried and 5 followed him. Lieutenant Smith tried and 2 followed him which was all that appeared to go. Adjutant Walbridge this minute came to me to warne the men with their packs to march into town, and all ready for a march. What is next I know not. 12 o'clock. The Gen. had a letter this morning from Col. Easton which informs us that the shipping that sailed from this place the other day were going to sail by him, and that he fired 7 Cannon Ball thro' the foremost of them which damaged her very much so that they were obliged all to retreat about 2 leagues where they all now lie at anchor, and we are ordered to march to Surrell immediately. I expect to march before night. 1 o'clock. All marched into town where we waited until dark. Then came word that we must march back to our quarters, for there were no boats for us to go down the river in. Our men all marched to their Quarters but Lieut. Noble, Serg't Rudd, Serg't Graves, Jacob Safford, Alex. Brush, David Brewster and I went into a tavern and drank Porter and had Brandy sling much as we thought proper. Then we all went to our lodgings, after we had concluded to be ready early in the morning for a march.

17th Nov. Went early in the morning to the city. I bought apples, pears and four Canadian forks and one jack knife. There was almost everything that one could mention to be sold. 9 o'clock in the morning. Concluded to call all the Captains and Sub's

WARNER'S REGIMENT RELIEVED.

together belonging to Col. Warner's Regiment for a Council. Resolved to send a petition to Col. Warner that we thought it was not proper as the circumstances were, for us to go to Surrell but to go home. We made choice of Capt'n Hopkins, Capt'n Grant and Capt'n Bronson to draw the petition, and carry to the Col. which they did and we were to meet again at 2 o'clock and sent to the Col. and Major Safford, and desire them to come to our meeting, which they did. We presented them the petition and they carried it to the General, and the Gen. gave the Col. a pass to return home with his regiment with an answer to his Officers, but the petition with the answer and pass will be too tedious to write here. Our Company with Chief of the Regiment set out from this place before night and crossed the River to Longail, but Col. Warner, Major Safford, Capt'n Hopkins, Adjutant Walbridge and I did not cross but went into the city and drank eleven bottles of porter, then went to the tavern and ate our supper of fowl and drank Cider.

9 o'clock went to our lodgings. I came to the house alone where I used to lie with a houseful, but they were all gone over the river. They were all abed. I knocked several times before they answered. The man got up but there was no fire in the house. He went to the neighbors for some fire, light a candle and I sat down to writing. The old woman got up, fried me some fresh pork and onions, before I took notice of what she was about, but I ate the second supper with a good stomach as hearty as anybody that had not ate for 12 hours. Between 11 and 12 o'clock at night and now going to bed, but cannot but dread our voyage across the Lake home, but hope we shall return with safety.

18th Nov. I set out, sun an hour high in the morning to go over to Longail, staid at Longail until sun half an hour high at night. Then Capt'n Hopkins and I put on our packs and set out for Laprairie. I was lame in one foot, but it grew worse. I was so lame before we got to Laprairie I thought I should

DIARY OF CAPT. JOHN FASSETT, JR.

never get there, but we got there about 7 o'clock at night.

19th Nov. Sunday. I am yet lame, but have sent out for a horse to ride to St. Johns. Col. Warner and Major Safford are yet behind for we left them at Longail. It is very cold but cloudy. 10 o'clock set out from Laprairie on foot. Went 9 miles before we stopped. Went into a tavern and drank so small beer. Overtook some sleds got our packs carried. I grew more lame. Went about 2 miles. Then got in to one of the sleds and rid into Bedel's camp. Went to see Nathan Ruggles. Got some bitters and got some dinner or supper of salt pork and fresh and some Johnny Cakes. Was very glad to see him. I hear there are boats to carry us across the Lake. Hope we shall get home well, but it seems a great way off. Went to the Tavern where I was when I was sick and had a good Lodging.

20th Nov. Went early in the morning to St. Johns and saw the fort where the Regulars lived so long, and every thing looked like destruction. Went over the lake to Hazon's house where Nathan had been living but had set out for home yesterday was a week. Heard this morning that Elijah Story died about 12 days ago. He died like a beast; killed himself with drinking. The last he called for was bread and grog, which seemed to be the whole of his desire. We are fixing to go home, but whether we shall go today, I dont know. We are heating an oven to bake some bread. Capt'n Potter, Capt'n Veal, Capt'n Bronson and their companies set out today for home, and part of Capt'n Fitches Company. The rest are going to stay till tomorrow.

21st Nov. Got up an hour before day. Ate some unleavened Bread, and Capt'n Grant set out for home, Before light I hear this morning. The enemy are very thick among us. An enemy we have not been troubled with. Some call them Body-lice, but for all they are so thick as they tell for I have not seen any yet. Col. Warner, Major Safford, Adjutant Walbridge, Capt'n Fitch, Lieut. Galusha,

THE START FOR HOME.

Searg't Major Hutchins and sundry others set out for home about 12 o'clock. One Company are left behind waiting for Corporal Hall. 4 o'clock heard our people had taken the vessel at Surrell. Col. Campbell came to St. Johns and ordered all the boats to stop, and got away our boat which troubled us very much. When we shall get another boat, I know not. Jacob Safford received a letter from Mr. D. Safford. Major Safford's wife sent him a letter which I got and opened, for the Major had gone forward. Read in the letter that all friends were well in Bennington, except ye Major's wife who had been sick 3 weeks.

22nd Nov. Got another boat. Are fixing of it to go home. Ben. Whipple has had the colic this morning very bad but is better. Last night Abram Hathaway fell down stairs and hurt himself pretty much. Cut a hole close by his eye and bruised him considerable, but is better today. After we had our Battoes taken from us yesterday, we got a boat to cross back again in. We had a barrel of pork in it which we left in the boat all night, and some sails that we had got made, but when we got up this morning the boat, meat and sails were all gone, and we see them no more. What we shall do for meat, I dont know. Ten o'clock. Miller, the man we sent to Surrell after Corporal Hall came back with heavy tidings, that he left Hall breathing his last breath to all appearance. He left him speechless. He brought news that Col. Easton and Col. Bedel had taken the King's vessels at Surrell which were 11 in number, and that they were all gone to Montreal. Said he heard that Gov. Carleton and St. Luke had fled from the vessels and were taken by the Canadians, but they were come to Montreal. Dr. Fay was gone there also. 2 o'clock afternoon, set out from Hazon's house went to St. John's and drewed some provisions and rum. The sun an hour and a half high. Set out for home, went to an Irishman's house about 19 miles from St. John's that night got there about 11 o'clock at night.

23d Nov. Set out about sun rise. Went about 35 miles to a house that was not finished. It is a small log house. Chimney in the middle, but no roof. We built a fire in both fire places. Had a sort of floor overhead. Ate Chocolate and unleavened cakes for supper. Very good. Slept very well. The wind was against us all the while from St. Johns to this place though not very high.

24th Nov. Set out as soon as it was light. The wind was high and against us. We bore away for a certain island about 5 miles and it was about 11 o'clock before we got there. When we went ashore we found it to be a small Island about 3 or 4 acres. The timber mainly Cedar, some fir, where we built a fire and roasted some rusty rashers of pork and ate unleavened cakes. Past noon. Here we are about a mile from Cumberland Point, waiting for the wind to fall. When we shall go we know not. Half after one o'clock the wind fell, so we set out again and went about 10 miles that night. When we got against Colchester Point there came up a squall out of the West, so that we were obliged immediately to turn about, for the Point, which we made without much difficulty. Got there before sunset. The wind held high all night and until almost night the next day. We made good fires but had no shelter. I was not well, had colic but got better before morning.

25th Nov. We killed 10 or 12 partridges which gave us a very good meal. Shot at a mark and some went hunting. About 4 o'clock the wind fell, so we set out again, steered for Parson's at Shelburn, but night came on and it clouded over that it was very dark so that we could not see to steer, and we tried to make a shore, but it was a very bold rocky shore that it was very difficult to land, but we at last got a shore, built fires and ate a little unleavened cake and cheese and lay down. About 11 o'clock at night Serg't Graves waked up and it snowed and the wind blew very hard. He waked us up to go and take care of the Battoe, for it was in great danger of staving,

"POINT TROUBLE AND DESTRUCTION."

and our guns and chests were in it. Went down and the Battoe was full of water. We got out all we could, but one man had to wade up to his middle in the water. We had a very tedious night indeed. We had nothing to cover us but the heavens and one blanket apiece and it snowed very hard all night, and where we were we knew not. But the timber was girdled where we lay, that we hoped we were not far from some house. Our provisions and our rum was almost out, but I slept tolerable well.

26th Nov. Sunday. When we came to look for our guns and packs there were some missing, and the Batteau was gone but we found it washed up ashore. We found 5 or 6 guns in it and one or two pack's washed up on shore, that upon the whole we saved all our effects, but the Battoe was stove to pieces and was good for nothing. We then thought proper to see if there was anybody lived in this part of the world. Sent 3 or 4 men to see who returned in 2 hours. Bro't news that we were within a mile and a half of a house. We were all rejoiced to hear it and made ready for a march, and about 10 o'clock we left the Point Trouble and Destruction, (for I dont know what else to call it) and came to the man's house, whose name is Smith. We were very glad to get here where we are now. It snowed all day and was a very cold night but we had gotten a good harbor.

27th. Nov. Stayed here all day. The wind was very high at north. Very cold, but grew warmer in the afternoon. We were short of it for provisions but went hunting, but killed nothing, but we heard that Mr. Persons had some of the Country's Pork. We sent and got some, and got some potatoes so that we made out very well. We got some of our flour baked, so that our unleavened bread ceased, but we had nothing but bread, pork and potatoes three times a day or two times which we pleased, if we would go without the three times. In the afternoon the wind fell, and three o'clock sent Lieut. Noble with two men in a canoe to Crown Point to get

a Battoe for us if they could, for we expected our regiment were all there.

28th Nov. Nothing extra. Capt'n Hopkins and I and Serg't Graves went to Mr. Parsons about 2 miles and came back at night and just as we got back there were two men come from Crown Point in a Battoe, which brought news that Col. Warner and Major Safford set out for home the 26th inst. These men saw nothing of Lieut. Noble. We are now consulting what to do.

29th Nov. Lieut. Noble came back last night without any Battoes. Bro't News that Col. Warner and his Regiment had gone home which made us very uneasy, for they promised to wait for us. We have now a head wind. About 11 o'clock set out Pery augre for Crown Point, but we had to cross the Lake first. When we got across the lake there was a number of men with the prisoners that were taken at Surrell. They were going to have a court martial upon Mr. Beman's clerk for being unfaithful to his trust for selling liquor and converting the money to his own use, etc. Captain Hopkins was president and I was one of the members. We condemned him to receive 39 stripes on the naked body, and to pay Mr. Beman the loss he had sustained by the prisoner. After dark we set out and went about 3 miles up the Lake on the West side and went ashore where we fared very well.

30th Nov. The wind held against us. 10 o'clock we set out, rowed up the Lake about 3 miles, then hoisted sail and tried to make Split Rock which was about 3 miles off, but we could not. The wind was so hard against us. We tacked away into the Lake and then back again and got but 100 rods in an hour and a half. Then we rowed up the bay west of Split Rock and ran ashore where we now are, without provisions or rum. A little before sunset, bought half bushel potatoes, and ate them without bread or meat, and at daylight down the wind fell and we set out and rowed to Grogg Harbor, about a mile south of Split Rock and the wind blew up in the

REACHES HOME. OFF AGAIN.

south so we were obliged to put ashore. The snow was over shoes. We went to making fires. It was very cold and tedious, but after our fires burned up, we lay down and slept some, but it was very cold.

Dec. 1st. Set out half an hour before day. Got to Crown Point about 12 o'clock. Got some Rum and a good dinner, and sun an hour high set out for Ticondaroga. Got there about nine o'clock at night.

Dec. 2nd. Drewed 6 days provisions and Rum. Got our discharge and after noon set out for Scheensborough in a boat, but soon turned back for the lake. Was covered with ice, that we could not go up the Lake. We then crossed the lake against Ticondaroga and took the woods. Lay in the woods all night.

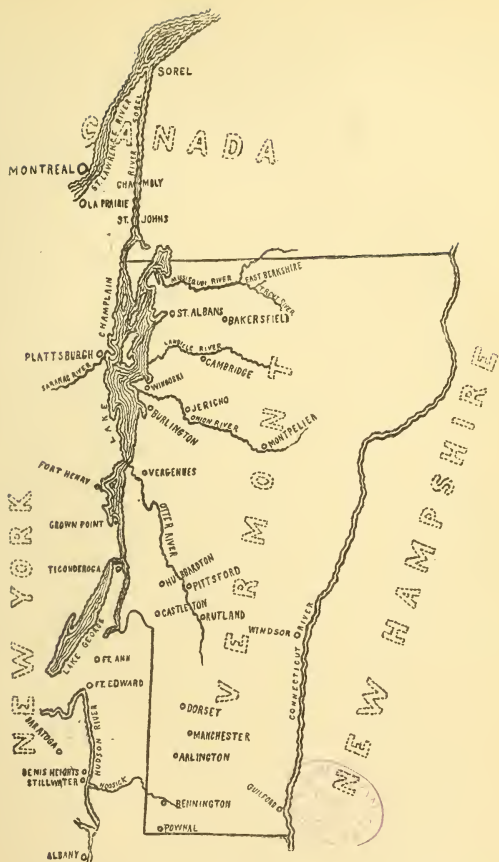
3d Dec. Got as far as Boardmans, Hebberton. Lodged there 4th of Dec. went to old Mr. Howe's, Putney, Lodged there 5th Dec. Went to Col. Warners. Lodged there the 6th December. Our horses were brought to us. Rode to Abel Hawley's. Lodged there.

7th Dec. Got home about sunset.



And Feb. 22nd 1776 set out again for another campaign to Canada and may God of his infinite mercy preserve me.

NOTE.—Remainder of Diary burned. See page ¹⁵⁶ 243.



The above rough drawing is copied principally after a map some ninety years old. It is not drawn to any scale and although it may not be accurate it will serve to give an idea of the different localities mentioned in this book.

Portraits

of

Some of the Descendants

In the collection of portraits, none are represented but children, grandchildren and great-grand-children of the generation to which Eliphalet Follett (1741-1778) and John Fassett, Jr. (1743-1803) belonged. It is not within the scope of this work to touch upon the great-great-grand-children, either in the illustrations or the genealogies.

Many of the portraits are reproductions of photographs taken when photography was in its infancy. Several are enlargements from very small and much faded likenesses, which fact alone should enhance their value.

No portraits will appear in the few copies intended for public libraries.



PERSIS FASSETT [FOLLETT]
(1767-1849). See page 150.



DR. JOHN FASSETT
(1769-1853). See page 152



ORAN FOLLETT
(1798-1894). See page 161



FREDERICK FOLLETT
(1804-1891). See page 107.



JOHN FASSETT FOLLETT
(1791-1863). See page 77.



SARAH LEMIRA WOODWORTH [FOLLETT]
(1790-1863). See page 77.



LURANIA WINCHELL [FOLLETT]
(1797-1869). See page 79.



MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT, JR.
(1793-1865). See page 79.



HARRY FOLLETT
(1795-1875). See page 80.



ELIZABETH FOLLETT [WOODWORTH]
(1797-1884). See page 80.



STRONG CLARK
(1792-1874). See page 81



HANNAH FOLLETT [CLARK]
(1803). See page 81.



ELIPHALET FOLLETT
(1805-1887). See page 81.



KATHARINE ELLEN VAN SICKLE [FOLLETT]
(1812-1886). See page 82.



JOHN PARKER
(1807-1891). See page 82.



PERSIS FOLLETT [PARKER]
(1809-1893). See page 83.

George
Parker



JAMES FOLLETT
(1811). See page 85.



JANE COMINGS [FOLLETT]
(1816-1864.) See page 85.



JAMES D. FOLLETT, SR.
(1815). See page 61.



DR. HARRY FASSETT
1794-1872. See page 157.



CLARISSA PECK [FASSETT]
1803-1890. See page 157.



ELIAS FASSETT
1798—?. See page 157.



JERUSHA MUNSON [FASSETT]
See page 158.



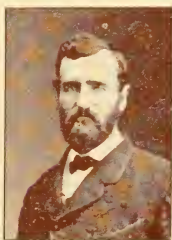
GEN. WILLIAM FARRAR SMITH, U. S. A.
See page 169.



BENJAMIN DEMING HOPKINS
(1834). See page 178.



JOSEPH ELLICOTT FOLLETT
(1821-1895). See page 105.



CAPT. FREDERICK FOLLETT, U. S. A.
(d. 1869?). See pages 109 and 110.



SARAH AMELIA FOLLETT (BUELL)
1830-1881). See page 110.



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN FOLLETT
See page 110.



FREDERICK FOLLETT BUELL
(1855). See page 110.



FREDERICK SEYMOUR FOLLETT
(1872). See page 110.



HARRIET FOLLETT (JEWETT)
(1818). See page 75.



HON. CHARLES FOLLETT
(1820). See page 75.



DR. ALFRED FOLLETT
(1822). See page 78.



FIDELIA FOLLETT (ROSE)
(1824). See page 79.



HON. MARTIN DEWEY FOLLETT
(1826). See page 79.



GEORGE FOLLETT
(1828). See page 79.



HON. JOHN FASSETT FOLLETT
(1831). See page 79.



AUSTIN WILLEY FOLLETT
(1833). See page 79.



HON. AMMI FOLLETT
(1825). See page 79.



NORMAN FOLLETT
(1827-1890). See page 79.



HENRY FITCH FOLLETT
1824. See page 80.



ELIZA WOODWORTH [FLEEK]
(1820-1891). See page 81.



DWIGHT FOLLETT
(1838-1862). See page 83.



LEWIS FOLLETT
(1840). See page 83.



HENRIETTA JEANETTE FOLLETT [STONE]
(1849). See page 83.



AMANDA FASSETT [DUNLEVY]
See page 159.



HON. ELIAS FASSETT
(1827. See page 155.



HENRY MARTIN PARKER
(1835. See page 85.



ELAM DEWEY PARKER
(1830. See page 85.



CHARLES DELAVAN PARKER
(1844-1894). See page 85.



ELLEN BETSEY FOLLETT [WELLS]
(1840). See page 86.



SARAH JANETTE FOLLETT [LINCOLN]
(1845). See page 86.



FAY COMINGS FOLLETT
1856). See page 86.



ANDREW COMINGS (1785-1854)
BETSEY JEWETT [PARKER] [COMINGS]
(1784-1864). See pages 84 and 86.

ADDITIONAL PARKER HISTORY.

In an effort to find and trace the ancestry of *Joseph Parker* (1757-1823), the writer found enough Parker genealogy to fill volumes. The Parker family of early New England must have been enormous. Many genealogical notices of the early Parkers trace the origin of the American families to James or Joseph who were brothers of Abraham, of Wiltshire, England, the first of the family in America, at Woburn, Mass. James (of Woburn in 1640) married Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Long of Charlestown, was a captain, removed to Groton and died 1701, aged 84 years. His son Joseph, born 1651, had a son Joseph born 1689. This account (see Savage's Genealogical Dictionary Vol. III, p. 351 and American Ancestry, Vol. III, p. 167) does not, however, join the *Joseph, Sr.*, of Coventry, Conn., whom the writer supposes to have been the father of *Joseph* (1757-1823). It is, of course, possible that *Joseph, Sr.*, was son of the Joseph before mentioned, but the writer has no proof or record of any description to show such connection.

In regard to *Joseph* (1757-1823) the following extracts from the Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 287, will interest his descendants:

"*Joseph Parker* came to Richford in 1802, and settled on land south of what is called the Parker pond. The county road was laid and chopped out from Berkshire, by this pond, through the geographical center of the town, to what is called the Mack place. About this time a few settled on this road, viz., a family by the name of Adams, Phineas R.

Wright, Hibbard Delano, and Abner Mack. But hills were high and hard and the road was never worked.

Joseph Parker moved into the north part of the town, on the place where Edwin Wheeler now lives. He died May 7, 1823, aged 70 years. He was town clerk, represented the town several times in the state legislature, and was justice of the peace. He had five sons, Russell, *John*, Ariel, Sterling and Chauncey. Russell lived to an old age, about 96 years. *John* married *Betsey Jewett*; died at South Richford, leaving one child, *John Parker*, now living in Ohio; the widow married Andrew Comings; was the mother of Elam Comings, a Congregational minister living in Highgate. Sterling was a leading man in town business; died Aug. 19, 1828, aged 47 years. Ariel died a few years since, aged 80 years. Chauncey is now living in town." On page 280 *Joseph Parker* is mentioned as representative 1804 and 1813, and Sterling Parker as representative 1823, 1824, 1825 and 1826.

In a notice of Hezekiah Goff, Sen., of the same town the following appears: He lived at South Richford until the war of 1812, when he enlisted for five years, and took with him two sons, Seth and Jonathan, his sister's son, John Parker, now Col. Parker, of Essex, Vt." etc., p. 287. As people seemed to move into a new country by families in the early days, it is not improbable that the Col. John Parker here referred to was a grandson of *Joseph Parker* (1757-1823) and cousin of *John Parker* (1807-1891).

Browning mentions the Parker family as one of the "American Families of Royal Descent," but the writer has not cared enough about the ancient history of the Parkers or any other family to investigate their royal origin.



* * * * The beareth gules on a cross
argent five fleur de lis of the first. Crest,
an eagle's neck between two wings displayed
argent, by the name Jewett.

Arms of *Edward Jewett*, of Bradford, England, who
married *Mary Taylor* in 1604. Obtained from H. L. Jewett,
Bethlehem, Pa.

American Ancestry, Volume III, p. 155, says of this
Edward: "The family are said to descend from Henri de
Juatt, a knight of the first crusade."

[Extract Vermont Historical Magazine, Vol. II, p. 311. Subject, "St. Albans."]

"Eleazer Jewett settled in the north part of the town and
built a grist and saw mill on a stream that is now nearly
dry. He came in 1793, and has been dead many years."

This Eleazer was probably the oldest brother of *Elam*
Jewett, who was born March 6, 1746.

H. P. W.

Columbus, O., January 20, 1896.

Additional Records.

Additional Records.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 03329 756 3

MAR 5 1920

